Serfojee Rajah 1829

1223

THE ADVENTURES OF RODERIC RANDOM

By T. SMOLLETT, M. D.

With the Life of the Author.

Et genus & Virtus, [illegible]m re, vilior alga est. HOR.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL. I.

Cooke's Edition.

EMBELLISHED WITH SUPERB ENGRAVINGS.

London:
Printed for C. COOKE, No. 17, Paternoster-Row,
And sold by all the Booksellers in
Great-Britain.

TANJORE MAHARAJA SERFOJI'S SARASWATI MAHAL

PREFACE.

1222

OF all kinds of ſatire there is none ſo entertaining and univerſally improving, as that which is introduced, as it were, occaſionally, in the courſe of an intereſting ſtory, which brings every incident home to life; and, by repreſenting familiar ſcenes in an uncommon and amuſing point of view, inveſts them with all the graces of novelty, while nature is appealed to in every particular.

The reader gratifies his curioſity in purſuing the adventures of a perſon in whoſe favour he is prepoſſeſſed; he eſpouſes his cauſe, he ſympathizes with him in diſtreſs, his indignation is heated againſt the authors of his calamity; the humane paſſions are inflamed; the contraſt between dejected virtue and inſulting vice appears with greater aggravation, and every impreſſion, having a double force on the imagination, the memory retains the circumſtance, and the heart improves by the example. The attention is not tired with a bare catalogue of characters, but agreeably diverted with all the variety of invention; and the viciſſitudes of life appear in their peculiar circumſtances, opening an ample field for wit and humour.

Romance, no doubt, owes its origin to ignorance, vanity, and ſuperſtition. In the dark ages of the world, when a man had rendered himſelf famous for wiſdom or valour, his family and adherents availed themſelves of his ſuperior qualities, magnified his virtues, and repreſented his character and perſon as ſacred and ſupernatural. The vulgar eaſily ſwallowed the bait, implored his protection, and yielded the tribute of homage and praiſe, even to adoration; his exploits were handed down to poſterity with a thouſand exaggerations; they were repeated as incitements to virtue; divine honours were paid, and altars erected to his memory, for the encouragement of thoſe who attempted to imitate his example; and hence aroſe the heathen mythology, which is no other than a collection of extravagant romances.—As learn-

ing advanced, and genius received cultivation, these stories were embellished with the graces of poetry; that they might the better recommend themselves to the attention, they were sung in public, at festivals, for the instruction and delight of the audience; and rehearsed before battle, as incentives to deeds of glory. Thus tragedy and the epic muse were born, and, in the progress of taste, arrived at perfection.—It is no wonder that the ancients could not relish a fable in prose, after they had seen so many remarkable events celebrated in verse, by their best poets: we therefore find no romance among them, during the æra of their excellence, unless the Cyropœdia of Xenophon may be so called: and it was not till arts and sciences began to revive, after the irruptions of the Barbarians into Europe, that any thing of this kind appeared. But when the minds of men were debauched by the imposition of priest-craft to the most absurd pitch of credulity, the authors of romance arose, and, losing sight of probability, filled their performances with the most monstrous hyperboles. If they could not equal the ancient Poets, in point of genius, they were resolved to excel them in fiction, and apply to the wonder, rather than the judgment of the readers. Accordingly they brought necromancy to their aid, and instead of supporting the character of their heroes by dignity of sentiment and practice, distinguished them by their bodily strength, activity, and extravagance of behaviour. Although nothing could be more ludicrous and unnatural than the figures they drew, they did not want patrons and admirers, and the world actually began to be infected with the spirit of knight-errantry, when Cervantes, by an inimitable piece of ridicule, reformed the taste of mankind, representing chivalry in the right point of view, and converting romance to purposes far more useful and entertaining, by making it assume the sock, and point out the follies of ordinary life.

The same method has been practised by other Spanish and French authors, and by none more successfully than by Monsieur Le Sage, who, in his Adventures of Gil Blas, has described the knavery and foibles of life with infinite

infinite humour and sagacity.—The following sheets I have modelled on his plan, taking the liberty, however, to differ from him in the execution, where I thought his particular situations were uncommon and extravagant, or peculiar to the country in which the scene is laid.—The disgraces of Gil Blas are, for the most part, such as rather excite mirth than compassion; he himself laughs at them; and his transitions from distress to happiness, or at least ease, are so sudden, that neither the reader has time to pity him, nor himself to be acquainted with affliction. This conduct, in my opinion, not only deviates from probability, but prevents that generous indignation which ought to animate the reader against the sordid and vicious disposition of the world.

I have attempted to represent modest merit struggling with every difficulty to which a friendless orphan is exposed, from his own want of experience, as well as from the selfishness, envy, malice, and base indifference of mankind. To secure a favourable prepossession, I have allowed him the advantage of birth and education, which, in the series of his misfortunes will, I hope, engage the ingenuous more warmly in his behalf; and, though I foresee that some people will be offended at the mean scenes in which he is involved, I persuade myself the judicious will not only perceive the necessity of describing those situations to which he must of course be confined in his low estate, but also find entertainment in viewing those parts of life, where the humours and passions are undisguised by affectation, ceremony, or education; and the whimsical peculiarities of disposition appear as nature has implanted them.—But I believe I need not trouble myself in vindicating a practice authorized by the best writers in this way, some of whom I have already named.

Every intelligent reader will, at first sight, perceive, I have not deviated from Nature, in the facts, which are all true in the main, although the circumstances are altered and disguised, to avoid personal satire.

It now remains to give my reasons for making the chief personage of this work a North Briton; which are

chiefly theſe; I could, at at a ſmall expence, beſtow on him ſuch education as I thought the dignity of his birth and character required, which could not poſſibly be obtained in England, by ſuch ſlender means as the nature of my plan would afford. In the next place I could repreſent ſimplicity of manners in a remote part of the kingdom, with more propriety than in any place near the capital; and, laſtly, the diſpoſition of the Scots, addicted to travelling, juſtifies my conduct in deriving an adventurer from that country.

That the delicate reader may not be offended at the unmeaning oaths which proceed from the mouths of ſome perſons in theſe Memoirs, I beg leave to premiſe, that I imagined nothing could more effectually expoſe the abſurdity of ſuch miſerable expletives, than a natural and verbal repreſentation of the diſcourſe in which they occur.

TANJORE MAHARAJA SERFOGI'S SARASWATI

APOLOGUE.

A Young painter, indulging a vein of pleaſantry, ſketched a kind of converſation-piece, repreſenting a bear, an owl, a monkey, and an aſs; and to render it more ſtriking, humourous, and moral, diſtinguiſhed every figure by ſome emblem of human life.

Bruin was exhibited in the garb and attitude of an old toothleſs, drunken ſoldier; the owl, perched upon the handle of a coffee-pot, with ſpectacles on noſe, ſeemed to contemplate a news-paper; and the aſs, ornamented with a huge tie-wig, (which, however, could not conceal his long ears) ſat for his picture to the monkey, who appeared with the implements of painting. This whimſical group afforded ſome mirth, and met with general approbation, until ſome miſchievous wag hinted that the whole was a lampoon upon the friends of the performer: an inſinuation, which was no ſooner circulated than thoſe very people who applauded it before began to be alarmed, and even to fancy themſelves ſignified by the ſeveral figures of the piece.

Among others, a worthy perſonage in years, who had ſerved in the army with reputation, being incenſed at the ſuppoſed outrage, repaired to the lodgings of the painter, and finding him at home,—"Hark ye, Mr. Monkey, (ſaid he) I have a good mind to convince you, that though the bear has loſt his teeth, he retains his paws, and that he is not ſo drunk but he can perceive your impertinence—'Sblood, Sir! that toothleſs jaw is a damned ſcandalous libel—but, don't you imagine me ſo chopfallen as not to be able to chew the cud of reſentment."—Here he was interrupted by the arrival of a learned Phyſician, who, advancing to the culprit, with fury in his aſpect, exclaimed, "Suppoſe the augmentation of the aſs's ears, ſhould prove the diminution of the baboon's!—Nay, ſeek not to prevaricate; for, by the beard of Æſculapius, there is not one hair in this perriwig that will not ſtand up in judgment to convict thee of perſonal abuſe!—Do but obſerve, Captain, how this pitiful little fellow has copied the very curls—the colour, indeed,

indeed, is different, but then the form and foretop are quite ſimilar."—While he thus remonſtrated, in a ſtrain of vociferation, a venerable ſenator entered, and waddling up to the delinquent, " Jackanapes! (cried he) I will now let thee ſee I can read ſomething elſe than a newſpaper, and that without the help of ſpectacles—here is your own note of hand, Sirrah, for money, which, if I had not advanced, you yourſelf would have reſembled an owl, in not daring to ſhew your face by day, you ungrateful, ſlanderous knave!"

In vain the aſtoniſhed painter declared that he had no intention to give offence, or to characteriſe particular perſons; they affirmed the reſemblance was too palpable to be overlooked; they taxed him with inſolence, malice, and ingratitude; and their clamours being overheard by the public, the captain was a bear, the doctor an aſs, and the ſenator an owl to his dying-day.

Chriſtian Reader, I beſeech thee, in the bowels of the Lord, remember this example while thou art employed in the peruſal of the following ſheets; and ſeek not to appropriate to thyſelf that which equally belongs to five hundred different people. If thou ſhouldſt meet with a character that reflects thee in ſome ungracious particular, keep thy own counſel; conſider that one feature makes not a face, and that though thou art perhaps diſtinguiſhed by a bottle-noſe, twenty of thy neighbours may be in the ſame predicament.

THE ADVENTURES OF RODERIC RANDOM.

CHAP. I.

Of my Birth and Parentage.

I WAS born in the northern part of this united kingdom, in the houſe of my grandfather, a gentleman of conſiderable fortune and influence, who had on many occaſions ſignalized himſelf in behalf of his country; and was remarkable for his abilities in the law, which he exerciſed with great ſucceſs, in the ſtation of a judge, particularly againſt beggars, for whom he had a ſingular averſion.

My father (his younger ſon) falling in love with a poor relation, who lived with the old gentleman in quality of houſekeeper, eſpouſed her privately: and I was the firſt fruit of that marriage.—During her pregnancy, a dream diſcompoſed my mother ſo much, that her huſband, tired with her importunity, at laſt conſulted a highland ſeer, whoſe favourable interpretation he would have ſecured before-hand by a bribe, but found him incorruptible. She dreamed, ſhe was delivered of a tennis-ball, which the devil, (who, to her great ſurpriſe, acted the part of midwife) ſtruck ſo forcibly with a racket, that it diſappeared in an inſtant; and ſhe was for ſome time inconſolable for the loſs of her offspring; when all of a ſudden ſhe beheld it return with equal violence, and enter the earth beneath her feet, whence immediately ſprang up a goodly tree, covered with bloſſoms, the ſcent of which operated ſo ſtrongly on her nerves, that ſhe awoke. The attentive ſage, after ſome deliberation, aſſured my parents, that their firſt-born would be a great traveller; that he would undergo many dangers and difficulties, and at laſt return to his native land, where he would flouriſh in happineſs and reputation.——How truly this was foretold will appear in the ſequel.—It was not long before ſome officious perſon informed my grandfather of certain familiarities that paſſed between his ſon and houſekeeper, which alarmed him ſo much, that, a few days after, he told my father it was high time for him to think of

ſettling;

ſettling; and that he had provided a match for him, to which he could in juſtice have no objection. My father, finding it would be impoſſible to conceal his ſituation much longer, frankly owned what he had done, and excuſed himſelf for not having aſked the conſent of his father, by ſaying, he knew it would have been to no purpoſe; and that, had his inclination been known, my grandfather might have taken ſuch meaſures as would have effectually put the gratification of it out of his power; he added, that no exceptions could be taken to his wife's virtue, birth, beauty, and good ſenſe, and as for fortune, it was beneath his care--The old gentleman, who kept all his paſſions, except one, in excellent order, heard him to an end with great temper; and then calmly aſked, how he propoſed to maintain himſelf and ſpouſe? He replied, he could be in no danger of wanting, while his father's tenderneſs remained, which he and his wife ſhould always cultivate with the utmoſt veneration; that he was perſuaded his allowance would be ſuitable to the dignity and circumſtances of his family; and to the proviſion already made for his brothers and ſiſters, who were happily ſettled under his protection.—" Your brothers and ſiſters, ſaid my grandfather, did not think it beneath them to conſult me in an affair of ſuch importance as matrimony; neither (I ſuppoſe) would you have omitted that piece of duty, had not you ſome ſecret fund in reſerve; to the comforts of which I leave you, with a deſire that you will this night ſeek out another habitation for yourſelf and wife, whither, in a ſhort time, I will ſend you an account of the expence I have been at in your education, with a view of being reimburſed.—Sir, you have made the grand tour—you are a polite gentleman—a very pretty gentleman; I wiſh you a great deal of joy, and am your very humble ſervant." So ſaying, he left my father in a ſituation eaſily imagined. However, he did not long heſitate; for, being perfectly well acquainted with his father's diſpoſition, he did not doubt that he was glad of this pretence to get rid of him; and his reſolves being invariable as the laws of the Medes and Perſians, he knew it would be to no

purpoſe

purpoſe to attempt him by prayers and intreaties; ſo, without any farther application, he betook himſelf, with his diſconſolate bedfellow, to a farm houſe, where an old ſervant of his mother dwelt; there they remained for ſome time in a ſituation but ill adapted to the elegance of their deſires and tenderneſs of their love; which nevertheleſs my father choſe to endure, rather than ſupplicate an unnatural, and inflexible parent; but my mother foreſeeing the inconveniencies to which ſhe muſt have been expoſed, had ſhe been delivered in this place, (and her pregnancy was very far advanced) without communicating her deſign to her huſband, went in diſguiſe to the houſe of my grandfather, hoping that her tears and condition would move him to compaſſion, and reconcile him to an event which was now irrevocably paſt.—She found means to deceive the ſervants, and was introduced as an unfortunate lady, who wanted to complain of ſome matrimonial grievances, it being my grandfather's particular province to decide in all caſes of ſcandal. She was accordingly admitted into his preſence, where, diſcovering herſelf, ſhe fell at his feet, and in the moſt affecting manner, implored his forgiveneſs; at the ſame time, repreſenting the danger that threatened not only her life, but that of his own grand-child, which was about to ſee the light.—He told her he was ſorry that the indiſcretion of her and his ſon had compelled him to make a vow, which put it out of his power to give them any aſſiſtance.—That he had already imparted his thoughts on that ſubject to her huſband, and was ſurpriſed that they ſhould diſturb his peace with any further importunity.—This ſaid, he retired.—The violence of my mother's affliction had ſuch an effect on her conſtitution, that ſhe was immediately ſeized with the pains of child-bed; and had not an old maid ſervant, to whom ſhe was very dear, afforded her pity and aſſiſtance, at the hazard of incurring my grandfather's diſpleaſure, ſhe and the innocent fruit of her womb muſt have fallen miſerable victims to his rigour and inhumanity.—By the friendſhip of this poor woman, ſhe was carried up to a garret, and immediately delivered of a

man-

man child, the ſtory of whoſe unfortunate birth he himſelf now relates.——My father being informed of what had happened, flew to the embraces of his darling ſpouſe, and while he loaded his offspring with paternal careſſes, could not forbear ſhedding a flood of tears, on beholding the dear partner of his heart, ſtretched upon a flock bed, in a miſerable apartment, unable to protect her from the inclemencies of the weather.—It is not to be ſuppoſed that the old gentleman was ignorant of what paſſed, though he affected to know nothing of the matter, and pretended to be very much ſurpriſed, when one of his grand-children, by his eldeſt ſon deceaſed, who lived with him as his heir apparent, acquainted him with the affair: he determined therefore to obſerve no medium, but immediately (on the third day after her delivery) ſent her a peremptory order to be gone, and turned off the ſervant who had preſerved her life. This behaviour ſo exaſperated my father, that he had recourſe to the moſt dreadful imprecations; and on his bare knees implored that heaven would renounce him, if ever he ſhould forget or forgive the barbarity of his ſire. The injuries which this unhappy mother received from her removal in ſuch circumſtances, and the want of neceſſaries where ſhe lodged, together with her grief and anxiety of mind, ſoon threw her into a languiſhing diſorder, which put an end to her life. My father, who loved her tenderly, was ſo affected with her death, that he remained ſix weeks deprived of his ſenſes; during which time, the people where he lodged carried the infant to the old man, who relented ſo far, on hearing the melancholy ſtory of his daughter in law's death, and the deplorable condition of his ſon, as to ſend the child to nurſe; and he ordered my father to be carried home to his houſe, where he ſoon recovered the uſe of his reaſon.—Whether this hard hearted judge felt any remorſe for his cruel treatment of his ſon and daughter; or (which was more probable) was afraid his character would ſuffer in the neighbourhood; he profeſſed great ſorrow for his conduct to my father, whoſe delirium was ſucceeded by a profound melancholy and reſerve.

At

At length he disappeared, and, notwithstanding all imaginary inquiry, could not be heard of, a circumstance which confirmed most people in the opinion of his having made away with himself in a fit of despair.—How I understood the particulars of my birth will appear in the course of these memoirs.

CHAP. II.

I grow up—Am hated by my Relations—Sent to School—Neglected by my Grandfather—Maltreated by my Master—Seasoned to Adversity—I form Cabals against the Pedant—Am debarred Access to my Grandfather—Hunted by his Heir—I demolish the Teeth of his Tutor.

THERE were not wanting some, who suspected my uncles of being concerned in my father's fate, on the supposition that they would all share in the patrimony destined for him: and this conjecture was strengthened by reflecting, that in all his calamities they never discovered the least inclination to serve him; but, on the contrary, by all the artifices in their power, fed his father's resentment, and supported his resolution of leaving him to misery and want.—But people of judgment treated this insinuation as an idle chimera: because, had my relations been so wicked as to consult their interest, by committing such an atrocious crime, the fate of my father would have extended to me too, whose life was another obstacle to their expectation. Mean while I grew apace, and as I strongly resembled my father, who was the darling of the tenants, I wanted nothing which their indigent circumstances could afford; but their favour was a weak resource against the jealous enmity of my cousins: who, the more my infancy promised, conceived the more implacable hatred against me; and before I was six years of age, had so effectually blockaded my grandfather, that I never saw him but by stealth, when I sometimes made up to his chair, as he sat to view his labourers in the field: on which occasions, he would stroke my head, bid me be a good boy, and promise to take care of me.—I was soon after sent to school at a village hard by; but as he never paid for my board,

nor supplied me with cloaths, books, and other necessaries I required, my condition was very ragged and contemptible, and the school-master, who, through fear of my grandfather, taught me *gratis*, gave himself no concern about the progress I made under his instruction. In spite of all these difficulties and disgraces, I became a good proficient in the Latin tongue; and, as soon as I could write tolerably, pestered my grandfather with letters to such a degree, that he sent for my master, and chid him severely for bestowing such pains on my education, telling him that if ever I should be brought to the gallows for forgery, which he had taught me to commit, my blood would lie on his head.——The pedant, who dreaded nothing more than the displeasure of his patron, assured his honour that the boy's ability was more owing to his own genius and application, than to any instruction or encouragement he received; that although he could not divest him of the knowledge he had already imbibed, unless he would impower him to disable his fingers, he should endeavour to prevent his future improvement. And indeed he punctually performed what he had undertaken, for, on pretence that I had wrote impertinent letters to my grandfather, he caused a board to be made with five holes in it, through which he thrust the fingers and thumb of my right hand, and fastened it by whip-chord to my wrist, in such a manner as effectually debarred me the use of my pen. But this restraint I was freed from in a few days, by an accident which happened in a quarrel between me and another boy, who taking upon him to insult my poverty, I was so incensed at his ungenerous reproach, that with one stroke of my machine, I cut him to the skull, to the great terror of myself and school-fellows, who left him bleeding on the ground, and ran to inform the master of what had happened. I was so severely punished for this trespass, that, were I to live to the age of Methusalem, the impression it made on me would not be effaced: no more than the antipathy and horror I conceived for the merciless tyrant who inflicted it. The contempt which my appearance naturally

rally produced in all who ſaw me, the continual wants to which I was expoſed, and my own haughty diſpoſition, impatient of affronts, involved me in a thouſand troubleſome adventures, by which I was at length inured to adverſity, and emboldened to undertakings far above my years. I was often inhumanly ſcourged for crimes I did not commit, becauſe, having the character of a vagabond in the village, every piece of miſchief, whoſe author lay unknown, was charged upon me. I have been found guilty of robbing orchards I never entered, of killing cats I never hurted, of ſtealing gingerbread I never touched, and of abuſing old women I never ſaw.—Nay, a ſtammering carpenter had eloquence enough to perſuade my maſter, that I fired a piſtol loaded with ſmall ſhot into his windows; though my landlady and the whole family bore witneſs that I was a-bed, faſt aſleep at the time the outrage was committed.—I was once flogged for having narrowly eſcaped drowning, by the ſinking of a ferry-boat in which I was paſſenger.—Another time for having recovered of a bruiſe occaſioned by a horſe and cart running over me. A third time for being bit by a baker's dog.—In ſhort, whether I was guilty or unfortunate, the correction and ſympathy of this arbitrary pedagogue were the ſame. Far from being ſubdued by this infernal uſage, my indignation triumphed over that ſlaviſh awe which had hitherto enforced my obedience; and the more my years and knowledge increaſed, the more I perceived the injuſtice and barbarity of his behaviour. By the help of an uncommon genius, and the advice and direction of our uſher, who had ſerved my father in his travels, I made a ſurpriſing progreſs in the claſſics, writing, and arithmetic; ſo that before I was twelve years old, I was allowed by every body to be the beſt ſcholar in the ſchool. This qualification, together with a boldneſs of temper, and ſtrength of make, which had ſubjected almoſt all my contemporaries, gave me ſuch influence over them, that I began to form cabals againſt my proſecutor; and was in hopes of being able to bid him defiance in a very ſhort time.—Being at the head of a faction, con-

fifting of thirty boys, moft of them of my own age, I was determined to put their metal to trial, that I might know how far they were to be depended upon, before I put my grand fcheme in execution; with this view, we attacked a body of ftout apprentices, who had taken poffeffion of a part of the ground allotted to us for the fcene of our diverfions, and who were then playing at ninepins on the fpot: but I had the mortification to fee my adherents routed in an inftant, and the leg of one of them broke in his flight by the bowl, which one of our adverfaries had detached in purfuit of us.—This difcomfiture did not hinder us from engaging them afterwards in frequent fkirmifhes, which we maintained by throwing ftones at a diftance, wherein I received many wounds, the fcars of which ftill remain. Our enemies were fo harraffed and interrupted by thefe alarms, that they at laft abandoned their conqueft, and left us to the peaceable enjoyment of our own territories.—It would be endlefs to enumerate the exploits we performed in the courfe of this confederacy, which became the terror of the whole village: infomuch, that when different interefts divided it, one of the parties, commonly courted the affiftance of Roderic Random, (by which name I was known) to caft the balance and keep the oppofite faction in awe.— Meanwhile I took the advantage of every play-day to prefent myfelf before my grandfather, to whom I feldom found accefs, by reafon of his being clofely befieged by a numerous family of his female grand-children, who, though they perpetually quarrelled among themfelves, never failed to join againft me, as the common enemy of all. His heir, who was about the age of eighteen, minded nothing but fox-hunting, and indeed was qualified for nothing elfe, notwithftanding his grandfather's indulgence, in entertaining a tutor for him at home; who at the fame time performed the office of parifh clerk. This young Acteon, who inherited his grandfather's antipathy to every thing in diftrefs, never fet eyes on me, without uncoupling his beagles, and hunting me into fome cottage or other, whither I generally fled for fhelter. In this

Chriftian

Chriſtian amuſement he was encouraged by his preceptor, who, no doubt, took ſuch opportunities to ingratiate himſelf with the riſing ſun, obſerving that the old gentleman, according to the courſe of nature, had not long to live, for he was already on the verge of fourſcore.—The behaviour of this raſcally ſycophant incenſed me ſo much, that one day, when I was beleagured by him and his hounds, in a farmer's houſe, where I had found protection, I took aim at him with a large pebble, which ſtruck out four of his fore-teeth, and effectually incapacitated him for doing the office of a clerk.

CHAP. III.

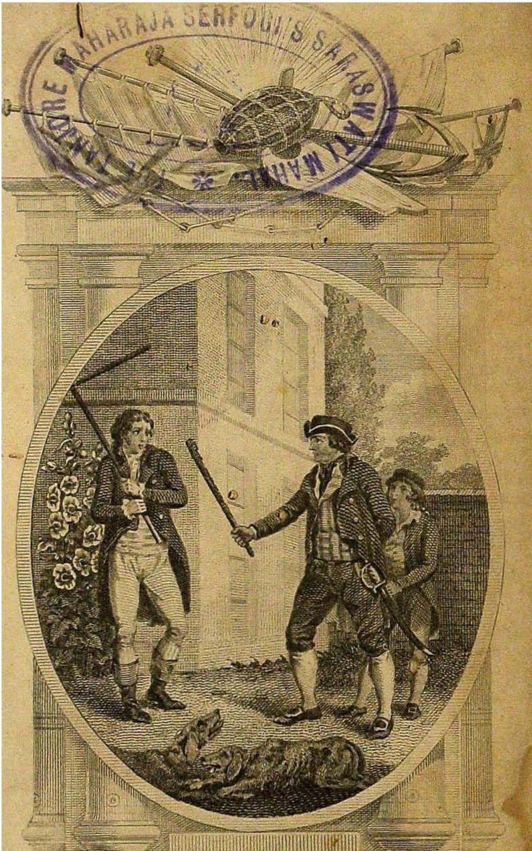
My Mother's Brother arrives—Relieves me—A Deſcription of him—He goes along with me to the Houſe of my Grandfather—Is encountered by his Dogs—Defeats them after a bloody Engagement—Is admitted to the old Gentleman—A Dialogue between them.

ABOUT this time my mother's only brother, who had been long abroad, lieutenant of a man of war, arrived in his own country; where, being informed of my condition, he came to ſee me, and out of his ſlender finances not only ſupplied me with what neceſſaries I wanted for the preſent, but reſolved not to leave the country until he had prevailed on my grandfather to ſettle ſomething handſome on me for the future. This was a taſk to which he was by no means equal, being entirely ignorant, not only of the judge's diſpoſition, but alſo of the ways of men in general, to which his education on board had kept him an utter ſtranger.—He was a ſtrong built man, ſomewhat bandy-legged, with a neck like that of a bull, and a face which had withſtood the moſt obſtinate aſſaults of the weather.—His dreſs conſiſted of a ſoldier's coat, altered by the ſhip's taylor, a ſtriped flannel jacket, a pair of red breeches, japanned with pitch, clean grey worſted ſtockings, large ſilver buckles, that covered three-fourths of his ſhoes, a ſilver laced hat, whoſe crown over-looked the brims above an inch and a half, a black bob wig in buckle, a check ſhirt, a ſilk hand-

handkerchief, and a hanger with a braſs handle, girded to his thigh by a tarniſhed laced belt, and a good oak plant under his arm.—Thus equipped, he ſet out with me (who by his bounty made a very decent appearance) for my grandfather's houſe, where we were ſaluted by Jowler and Cæſar, whom my couſin, the young maſter, had let looſe at our approach. Being well acquainted with the inveteracy of theſe curs, I was about to betake myſelf to my heels, when my uncle ſeized me with one hand, brandiſhed his cudgel with the other, and at one blow laid Cæſar ſprawling on the ground: but, finding himſelf attacked at the ſame time in the rear by Jowler, and fearing Cæſar might recover, he drew his hanger, wheeled about, and by a lucky ſtroke, ſevered Jowler's head from his body.—By this time the young fox hunter and three ſervants, armed with pitch forks and flails, were come to the aſſiſtance of the dogs, whom they found breathleſs upon the field: and my couſin was ſo provoked at the death of his favourites, that he ordered his attendants to advance and take vengeance on their executioner, whom he loaded with all the curſes and reproaches his anger could ſuggeſt.—Upon which my uncle ſtept forward, with an undaunted air, at the ſight of whoſe bloody weapon his antagoniſts fell back with precipitation, when he accoſted their leader thus:—“ Lookee, brother, your dogs have boarded me without provocation; what I did was in my own defence.--So you had beſt be civil, and let us ſhoot a-head, clear of you,” Whether the young 'ſquire miſinterpreted my uncle's deſire of peace, or was enraged at the fate of his hounds, beyond his uſual pitch of reſolution, I know not; but he ſnatched a flail from one of his followers, and came up with a ſhew of aſſaulting the lieutenant, who, putting himſelf in a poſture of defence, proceeded thus:——“ Lookee, you lubberly ſon of a w—e, if you come a-thwart me, 'ware your ginger-bread.—I'll be foul of your quarter, d—n me.” This declaration, followed by a flouriſh of his hanger, ſeemed to check the progreſs of the young gentleman's choler, who, looking behind him, perceived his attendants had ſlunk into the

houſe,

MAHARAJA SERFOJI'S SARASWATI MAHAL



RODERIC RANDOM

Lieutenant Bowling after his attack
on the dogs. expressing his contempt
at the threats of the young Squire.

Vide Vol. I. Chap 3. Page 19.

Drawn by E. F. Burney. *Printed for C. Cooke July 7. 1797.* *Engraved by Warren*

houfe, fhut the gate, and left him to decide the contention by himfelf.—Here a parley enfued, which was introduced by my coufin's afking, "Who the d—l are you? —What do you want?—Some fcoundrel of a feaman, (I fuppofe) who has deferted and turned thief.—But don't think you fhall efcape, firrah—I'll have you hang'd, you dog, I will—your blood fhall pay for that of my two hounds, you ragamuffin.——I would not have parted with them to fave your whole generation from the gallows, you ruffian you."—"None of your jaw, you fwab—none of your jaw (replied my uncle) elfe I fhall trim your lac'd jacket for you.—I fhall rub you down with an oaken towel, my boy—I fhall."—So faying, he fheathed his hanger and grafped his cudgel. Meanwhile the people of the houfe being alarmed, one of my female coufins opened a window, and afked what was the matter? "The matter (anfwered the Lieutenant) no great matter, young woman.—I have bufinefs with the old gentleman, and this fpark, belike, won't allow me to come along-fide of him, that's all."—After a few minutes paufe, we were admitted, and conducted to my grandfather's chamber, through a lane of my relations, who honoured me with very fignificant looks, as I paffed along. When we came into the judge's prefence, my uncle, after two or three fea bows, expreffed himfelf in this manner:—"Your fervant, your fervant.—What chear, father? what chear!—I fuppofe you don't know me; may-hap you don't—My name is Tom Bowling,—and this here boy, you look as if you did not know him neither,—'tis like you may'nt.—He's new rigged, i'faith; his cloth don't fhake in the wind fo much as it was wont to do. 'Tis my nephew, d'ye fee, Roderic Random,—your own flefh and blood, old gentleman. Don't lag a-ftern, you dog," (pulling me forward.) My grandfather (who was laid up with the gout) received this relation, after his long abfence, with that coldnefs of civility which was peculiar to him; told him he was glad to fee him, and defired him to fit down. —"Thank ye, thank ye, fir, I had as lief ftand, (faid my uncle (for my own part I defire nothing of you; but

but if you have any confcience at all, do fomething for this poor boy, who has been ufed at a very unchriftian rate.—Unchriftian do I call it?—I am fure the Moors in Barbary have more humanity than to leave their little ones to want. I would fain know why my fifter's fon is more neglected than that there fair-weather Jack," (pointing to the young 'fquire, who with the reft of my coufins had followed us into the room.) "Is not he as near a-kin to you as the other?—Is not he much handfomer, and better built than that great chucklehead?—Come, come, confider, old gentleman, you are going in a fhort time to give an account of your evil actions. Remember the wrongs you did his father; and make all the fatisfaction in your power, before it be too late.—The leaft thing you can do is to fettle his father's portion on him."—The young ladies, who thought themfelves too much concerned to contain themfelves any longer, fet up their throats all together againft my protector.——"Scurvy companion,—faucy tarpaulin,—rude, impertinent fellow, did he think to prefcribe to grandpapa?——His fifter's brat had been too well taken care of.—Grandpapa was too juft not to make a difference between an unnatural rebellious fon, and his dutyful loving children, who took his advice in all things:" and fuch expreffions were vented againft him with great violence; until the judge at length commanded filence. He calmly rebuked my uncle for his unmannerly behaviour, which he faid he would excufe on account of his education: he told him he had been very kind to the boy, whom he had kept at fchool feven or eight years, although he was informed he made no progrefs in his learning; but was addicted to all manner of vice, which he rather believed, becaufe he himfelf was a witnefs to a barbarous piece of mifchief he had committed on the jaws of his chaplain.—But, however, he would fee what the lad was fit for, and bind him apprentice to fome honeft tradefman or other, provided he would mend his manners, and behave for the future as became him.—The honeft tar (whofe pride and indignation boiled within him) anfwered my grandfather, that it was true
he

he had ſent him to ſchool, but it had coſt him nothing, for he had never been at one ſhilling expence, to furniſh him with food, raiment, books, or other neceſſaries; ſo that it was not much to be wondered, if the boy made ſmall progreſs; and yet, whoever told him ſo, was a lying, lubberly raſcal, and deſerved to be keel-hauled; for thof he (the lieutenant) did not underſtand thoſe matters himſelf, he was well informed as how Rory was the beſt ſcholar of his age, in all the country; the truth of which he would maintain, by laying a wager of his whole half year's pay on the boy's head;—(with theſe words he pulled out his purſe, and challenged the company), "Neither is he predicted to vice, as you affirm, but rather left like a wreck (d'ye ſee) at the mercy of the wind and weather, by your neglect, old gentleman.—As for what happened to your chaplain, I am only ſorry, that he did not knock out the ſcoundrel's brains, inſtead of his teeth.—By the Lord, if ever I come up with him, he had better be in Greenland,—that's all.——Thank you for your courteous offer of binding the lad apprentice to a tradeſman. I ſuppoſe you would make a taylor of him——would you?—I had rather ſee him hang'd, d'ye ſee—Come along, Rory, I perceive how the land lies, my boy,—let's tack about, i'faith,—while I have a ſhilling, thou ſhan't want a teſter.—B'ye old gentleman, you're bound for the other world, but I believe damnably ill provided for the voyage."—Thus ended our viſit; and we returned to the village, my uncle muttering curſes all the way againſt the old ſhark and the young fry that ſurrounded him.

CHAP. IV.

My Grandfather makes his Will—Our ſecond Viſit—He dies—His Will is read in preſence of all his living Deſcendants—The Diſappointment of my female Couſins—My Uncle's behaviour.

A FEW weeks after our viſit, we were informed that the old judge, at the end of a fit of thoughtfulneſs, which laſted three days, had ſent for a notary and made his will; that the diſtemper had mounted from

his legs to his ſtomach, and being conſcious of his approaching end, he had deſired to ſee all his deſcendants without exception.—In obedience to this ſummons, my uncle ſet out with me a ſecond time, to receive the laſt benediction of my grandfather; often repeating by the road, "Ey, ey, we have brought up the old hulk at laſt.—You ſhall ſee—you ſhall ſee the effect of my admonition."—When we entered his chamber, which was crouded with his relations, we advanced to the bed-ſide, where we found him in his laſt agonies, ſupported by two of his grand-daughters, who ſat on each ſide of him, ſobbing moſt piteouſly, and wiping away the froth and ſlaver as it gathered on his lips, which they frequently kiſſed with a ſhew of great anguiſh and affection.—My uncle approached him with theſe words, "What! he's not a-weigh.—How fare ye—how fare ye, old gentleman? Lord have mercy upon your poor ſinful ſoul."—Upon which the dying man turned his languid eyes towards us, and Mr. Bowling went on—"Here's poor Rory come to ſee you before you die, and receive your bleſſing—What, man! don't deſpair,—you have been a great ſinner 'tis true, what then? There's a righteous judge above, an't there? He minds me no more than a porpuſs. Yes, yes, he's a-going,—the land crabs will have him, I ſee that: his anchor's a-peak, i'faith." —This homely conſolation ſcandalized the company ſo much, and eſpecially the parſon, who probably thought his province invaded, that we were obliged to retire into the other room, where in a few minutes, we were convinced of my grandfather's deceaſe, by a diſmal yell uttered by the young ladies in his apartment: whither we immediately haſtened, and found his heir, who had retired a little before into a cloſet, under pretence of giving vent to his ſorrow, aſking, with a countenance beſlubbered with tears, if his grandpapa was certainly dead?—"Dead! (ſays my uncle, looking at the body) ay, ay, I warrant him as dead as a herring.——Odd's fiſh! now my dream is out for all the world.—I thought I ſtood upon the forecaſtle, and ſaw a parcel of carrion crows foul of a dead ſhark that floated alongſide, and

the

the devil perching on our ſprit-ſail yard, in the likeneſs of a blue bear—who, d'ye ſee, jumped over-board upon the carcaſe, and carried it to the bottom in his claws." —"Out upon thee reprobate (cries the parſon) out upon thee, blaſphemous wretch!—Doſt thou think his honour's ſoul is in the poſſeſſion of Satan?"—The clamour immediately aroſe, and my poor uncle, being ſhouldered from one corner of the room to the other, was obliged to lug out in his own defence, and ſwear he would turn out for no man, till ſuch time as he knew who had a title to ſend him adrift.——"None of your tricks upon travellers, ſaid he: mayhap, old Buff has left my kinſman here, his heir:—If he has, it will be the better for his miſerable ſoul.—Odds bobs; I'd deſire no better news.—I'd ſoon make him a clear ſhip I warrant you." To avoid any further diſturbance one of my grandfather's executors, who was preſent, aſſured Mr. Bowling, that his nephew ſhould have all manner of juſtice; that a day ſhould be appointed, after the funeral, for examining the papers of the deceaſed, in preſence of all his relations; till which time every deſk and cabinet in the houſe ſhould remain cloſe ſealed; and that he was very welcome to be witneſs to this ceremony, which was immediately performed to his ſatisfaction.—In the mean time, orders were given to provide mourning for all the relations, in which number I was included; but my uncle would not ſuffer me to accept of it, until I ſhould be aſſured whether or no I had reaſon to honour his memory ſo far.—During this interval, the conjectures of people, with regard to the old gentleman's will, were various: as it was well known, he had, beſides his landed eſtate, which was worth 700l. per annum, ſix or ſeven thouſand pounds at intereſt; ſome imagined, that the whole real eſtate (which he had greatly improved) would go to the young man whom he always entertained as his heir; and that the money would be equally divided between my female couſins (five in number) and me—Others were of opinion, that as the reſt of his children had been already

pro-

provided for, he would only bequeath two or three hundred pounds to each of his grand-daughters, and leave the bulk of the ſum to me, to atone for his unnatural uſage of my father.—At length the important hour arrived, and the will was produced in the midſt of the expectants, whoſe looks and geſtures formed a group that would have been very entertaining to an unconcerned ſpectator.—But the reader can ſcarce conceive the aſtoniſhment and mortification that appeared, when an attorney pronounced aloud, the young 'ſquire ſole heir of all his grandfather's eſtate, perſonal and real.—My uncle, who had liſtened with great attention, ſucking the head of his cudgel all the while, accompanied theſe words of the attorney with a ſtare, and *whew*, that alarmed the whole aſſembly. The eldeſt and perteſt of my female competitors, who had been always very officious about my grandfather's perſon, enquired with a faultering accent, and viſage as yellow as an orange, "if there were no legacies?" and was anſwered, "none at all."—Upon which ſhe fainted away.—The reſt, whoſe expectations were not ſo ſanguine, ſupported their diſappointment with more reſolution, though not without giving evident marks of indignation and grief, at leaſt as genuine as that which appeared in them at the old gentleman's death. My conductor, after having kicked with his heel for ſometime againſt the wainſcot, began: "ſo there's no legacy, friend, ha!—here's an old ſuccubus;—but ſomebody's ſoul howls for it, d—n me!"—The parſon of the pariſh, who was one of the executors, and had acted as ghoſtly director to the old man, no ſooner heard this exclamation, than he cried out, "Avaunt, uncriſtian reviler! avaunt? wilt thou not allow the ſoul of his honour to reſt in peace?" —But this zealous paſtor did not find himſelf ſo warmly ſeconded, as formerly, by the young ladies, who now joined my uncle againſt him, and accuſed him of having acted the part of a buſy body with their grandpapa, whoſe ears he had certainly abuſed by falſe ſtories to their prejudice, or elſe he would not have neglected them

in

in ſuch an unnatural manner.—The young 'ſquire was much diverted with this ſcene, and whiſpered to my uncle, that if he had not murdered his dogs, he would have ſhewn him glorious fun, by hunting a black badger (ſo he termed the clergyman).—The ſurly lieutenant, who was not in a humour to reliſh this amuſement, replied, "You and your dogs may be d—ned—I ſuppoſe you will find them with your old dad, in the latitude of hell.——Come, Rory,——about ſhip, my lad, we muſt ſteer another courſe, I think."—And away we went.

CHAP V.

The Schoolmaſter uſes me barbarouſly—I form a Project of Revenge, in which I am aſſiſted by my Uncle—I leave the Village—Am ſettled at an Univerſity by his Generoſity.

ON our way back to the village, my uncle ſpoke not a word during the courſe of a whole hour, but whiſtled with great vehemence, the tune of *Why ſhould we quarrel for riches, &c.* his viſage being contracted all the while into a moſt formidable frown. At length his pace encreaſed to ſuch a degree, that I was left behind a conſiderable way: then he waited for me; and when I was almoſt up with him, called out in a ſurly tone, "Bear a hand damme! muſt I bring to every minute for you, you lazy dog."—Then laying hold of me by the arm, hauled me along, until his good nature and reflection getting the better of his paſſion, he ſaid, "Come my boy, don't be caſt down—the old raſcal is in hell;—that's ſome ſatisfaction; you ſhall go to ſea with me, my lad.—*A light heart and a thin pair of breeches, goes through the world, brave boys*; as the ſong goes—eh?"—Though this propoſal did not at all ſuit my inclination, I was afraid of diſcovering my averſion to it, leſt I ſhould diſoblige the only friend I had in the world; and he was ſo much a ſeaman, that he never dreamt I could have any objection to his deſign; conſequently gave himſelf no trouble in conſulting my approbation. But this reſolution was ſoon dropt, by the advice of our uſher, who aſſured Mr. Bowling, it would be a thouſand pities to baulk my genius, which would

certainly, one day, make my fortune on ſhore, provided it received due cultivation—Upon which this generous tar determined (though he could ill afford it) to give me univerſity education; and accordingly ſettled my board and other expences, at a town not many miles diſtant, famous for its colleges, whither we repaired in a ſhort time. But, before the day of our departure, the ſchool-maſter, who no longer had the fear of my grandfather before his eyes, laid aſide all decency and reſtraint, and not only abuſed me in the groſſeſt language, as a wicked, profligate, dull, beggarly miſcreant, whom he had taught out of charity, but alſo inveighed in the moſt bitter manner againſt the memory of the judge (who by the bye had procured that ſettlement for him) hinting, in pretty plain terms, that the old gentleman's ſoul was damned to all eternity, for his injuſtice in neglecting to pay for my learning.—This brutal behaviour, adding to the ſufferings I had formerly undergone, made me think it high time to be revenged of this inſolent pedagogue. Having conſulted my adherents, I found them all ſtaunch in their promiſes to ſtand by me; and our ſcheme was this:—In the afternoon preceding the day of my departure for the univerſity, I reſolved to take the advantage of the uſher's going out to make water, and ſhut the great door, that he might not come to the aſſiſtance of his ſuperior. This being done, the aſſault was to be begun, by my advancing to my maſter and ſpitting in his face. I was to be ſeconded by two of the ſtrongeſt boys in the ſchool, who were devoted to me; their buſineſs was to join me in dragging the tyrant to a bench, over which he was to be laid, and his bare poſteriors heartily flogged with his own birch, which we propoſed to wreſt from him in the ſtruggle; but if we ſhould find him too many for us all three, we were to demand the aſſiſtance of our competitors, who ſhould be ready to reinforce us, or oppoſe any thing that might be undertaken for the maſter's relief. One of my principal aſſiſtants was called Jeremy Gawky, ſon and heir of a wealthy gentleman in the neighbourhood; and the name of the other Hugh Strap, the cadet of a family

mily which had given ſhoemakers to the village time out of mind—I had once ſaved Gawky's life by plunging into a river and dragging him on ſhore, when he was on the point of being drowned.—I had often reſcued him from the clutches of thoſe whom his unſufferable arrogance had provoked to a reſentment he was not able to ſuſtain; and many times ſaved his reputation and poſteriors, by performing his exerciſes at ſchool; ſo that it is not to be wondered at if he had a particular regard for me and my intereſts. The attachment of Strap flowed from a voluntary, diſintereſted inclination, which had manifeſted itſelf on many occaſions in my behalf, he having once rendered me the ſame ſervice that I had done Gawky, by ſaving my life at the riſk of his own; and often fathered offences that I had committed, for which he ſuffered ſeverely, rather than I ſhould feel the weight of the puniſhment I deſerved.—Theſe two champions were the more willing to engage in this enterprize, becauſe they intended to leave the ſchool the next day, as well as I; the firſt being ordered by his father to return into the country, and the other being bound apprentice to a barber, at a market town not far off.

In the mean time my uncle being informed of my maſter's behaviour to me, was enraged at his inſolence, and vowed revenge ſo heartily that I could not refrain from telling him the ſcheme I had concerted, which he heard with great ſatisfaction, at every ſentence ſquirting out a mouthful of ſpittle, tinctured with tobacco, of which he conſtantly chewed a large quid.—At laſt, pulling up his breeches, he cried, "No, no, Z—ds! that won't do neither,—howſomever, 'tis a bold undertaking, my lad,—that I muſt ſay, i'faith!—but lookee, lookee, how doſt propoſe to get clear off?—won't the enemy give chaſe, my boy?—aye, aye, that he will I warrant,—and alarm the whole coaſt.—Ah! God help thee, more ſail than ballaſt, Rory.——Let me alone for that—leave the whole to me—I'll ſhew him the fore top-ſail, I will.—If ſo be your ſhip-mates are jolly boys and won't flinch, you ſhall ſee, you ſhall ſee, egad, I'll play him a ſalt-water trick—I'll bring him to the gang-way, and anoint

 him

him with a cat of nine tails; he ſhall have a round dozen doubled, my lad, he ſhall—and be left laſhed to his meditations." We were very proud of our aſſociate, who immediately went to work, and prepared the inſtrument of his revenge with great ſkill and expedition; after which he ordered our baggage to be packed up and ſent off, a day before our attempt, and got horſes ready to be mounted, as ſoon as the affair ſhould be over. At length the hour arrived, when our auxiliary, ſiezing the opportunity of the uſher's abſence, bolted in, ſecured the door, and immediately laid hold of the pedant by his collar, who bawled out, "Murder! Thieves!" with the voice of a Stentor. Though I trembled all over like an aſpen leaf, I knew there was no time to be loſt, and accordingly got up, and ſummoned our aſſociates to my aſſiſtance.—Strap, without any heſitation, obeyed the ſignal, and ſeeing me leap upon the maſter's back, ran immediately to one of his legs, which, pulling with all his force, his dreadful adverſary was humbled to the ground: upon which Gawky, who had hitherto remained in his place, under the influence of an univerſal trepidation, haſtened to the ſcene of action, and inſulted the fallen tyrant with a loud huzza, in which the whole ſchool joined.--This noiſe alarmed the uſher, who, finding himſelf ſhut out, endeavoured, partly by threats; and partly by entreaties, to procure admiſſion.—My uncle bade him have a little patience, and he would let him in preſently: but if he pretended to move from that place it ſhould fare worſe with the ſon of a b——h his ſuperior, on whom he intended only to beſtow a little wholeſome chaſtiſement, for his barbarous uſage to Rory, "to which (ſaid he) you are no ſtranger."—By this time we had dragged the criminal to a poſt, to which Bowling tied him with a rope he had provided on purpoſe, after having ſecured his hands and ſtripped his back.—In this ludicrous poſture he ſtood (to the no ſmall entertainment of the boys, who crowded about him and ſhouted with great exultation at the novelty of the ſight) venting bitter imprecations againſt the lieutenant, and reproaching his ſcholars with treachery and rebellion: when the uſher was admitted,

whom

whom my uncle accoſted in this manner; "Harkee, Mr. Syntax, I believe you are an honeſt man, d'ye ſee —and I have a reſpect for you—but for all that, we muſt, for our own ſecurity (d'ye ſee) belay you for a ſhort time."—With theſe words he pulled out ſome fathoms of cord, which the honeſt man no ſooner ſaw, than he proteſted with great earneſtneſs, he would allow no violence to be offered to him, at the ſame time accuſing me of perfidy and ingratitude. But Bowling repreſenting that it was in vain to reſiſt, and that he did not mean to uſe him with violence and indecency; but only to hinder him from raiſing the hue and cry againſt us, before we ſhould be out of their power; he allowed himſelf to be bound to his own deſk, where he ſat a ſpectator of the puniſhment inflicted on his principal. My uncle having upbraided this arbitrary wretch with his inhumanity to me, told him, that he propoſed to give him a little diſcipline for the good of his ſoul, which he immediately put in practice with great vigour and dexterity. This ſmart application to the pedant's withered poſteriors gave him ſuch exquiſite pain, that he roared like a mad bull, danced, curſed, and blaſphemed like a frantic bedlamite. When the lieutenant thought himſelf ſufficiently revenged, he took his leave of him in theſe words, "Now, friend, you'll remember me the longeſt day you have to live.—I have given you a leſſon that will let you know what flogging is, and teach you to have more ſympathy for the future—ſhout, boys, ſhout."—This ceremony was no ſooner over, than my uncle propoſed they ſhould quit the ſchool, and convoy their old comrade Rory to a public houſe, about a mile from the village, where he would treat them all.—His offer being joyfully embraced, he addreſſed himſelf to Mr. Syntax, and begged him to accompany us; but this invitation he refuſed with great diſdain, telling my benefactor he was not the man he took him to be.— Well, well, old ſurly, (replied my uncle, ſhaking his hand) thou art an honeſt fellow notwithſtanding; and if ever I have the command of a ſhip, thou ſhalt be our ſchoolmaſter, i'faith." So ſaying, he diſmiſſed the boys,

and, locking the door, left the two preceptors to conſole one another; while we moved forwards on our journey, attended by a numerous retinue, whom he treated according to his promiſe.—We parted with many tears, and lay that night at an inn on the road, about ten miles ſhort of the town where I was to remain, at which we arrived next day, and I found I had no cauſe to complain of the accommodations provided for me; in being boarded at the houſe of an apothecary, who had married a diſtant relation of my mother. In a few days after, my uncle ſet out for his ſhip, having ſettled the neceſſary funds for my maintenance and education.

CHAP VI.

I make great progreſs in my Studies—Am careſſed by every body.—My female Couſins take Notice of me.—I reject their Invitation—They are incenſed, and conſpire againſt me—I am left deſtitute by a Misfortune that befals my Uncle—Gawky's Treachery—My Revenge.

AS I was capable of reflection, I began to conſider my precarious ſituation; that I was utterly abandoned by thoſe whoſe duty it was to protect me; and that my ſole dependence was on the generoſity of one man, who was not only expoſed by his profeſſion to continual dangers, which might one day deprive me of him for ever; but alſo, ſubject to thoſe viciſſitudes of diſpoſition, which a change of fortune uſually creates; or, which a better acquaintance with the world might produce: for I always aſcribed his benevolence to the dictates of a heart as yet undebauched by a commerce with mankind—Alarmed at theſe conſiderations, I reſolved to apply myſelf with great care to my ſtudies, and enjoy the opportunity in my power: This I did with ſuch ſucceſs, that in the ſpace of three years I underſtood Greek very well, was pretty far advanced in the mathematics, and no ſtranger to moral and natural philoſophy; but above all things, I valued myſelf on my taſte in the Belle Lettres, and a talent for poetry, which had already produced ſome pieces, that met with a very favourable reception. Theſe qualifications, added to a good face and ſhape, acquired the eſteem and

acquaintance

acquaintance of the moſt conſiderable people in town, and I had the ſatisfaction to find myſelf in ſome degree of favour with the ladies; an intoxicating piece of good fortune, to one of my amorous complexion; which I obtained, or at leaſt preſerved, by gratifying their propenſity to ſcandal, and lampooning their rivals.—Two of my female couſins lived in this place, with their mother, ſince the death of their father, who left his whole fortune equally divided between them; ſo that, if they were not the moſt beautiful, they were at leaſt the richeſt toaſts in town; and received daily the addreſſes of all the beaux and cavaliers of the country.—Although I had hitherto been looked upon by them with the moſt ſupercilious contempt, my character now attracted their notice ſo much, that I was given to underſtand, I might be honoured with their acquaintance, if I pleaſed.—The reader will eaſily perceive, that this condeſcenſion either flowed from the hope of making my poetical capacity ſubſervient to their malice, or at leaſt of ſcreening themſelves from the laſh of my reſentment, which they had effectually provoked.—I enjoyed this triumph with great ſatisfaction: and not only rejected their offer with diſdain, but in all my performances, whether ſatire or panegyric, induſtriouſly avoided mentioning their names, even while I celebrated thoſe of their intimates; this neglect mortified their pride exceedingly, and incenſed them to ſuch a degree, that they were reſolved to make me repent of my indifference.—The firſt ſtroke of their revenge conſiſted in their hiring a poor collegian to write verſes againſt me, the ſubject of which was my own poverty, and the cataſtrophe of my unhappy parents; but, beſides the badneſs of the compoſition (of which they themſelves were aſhamed) they did not find their account in endeavouring to reproach me with thoſe misfortunes which they and their relations had brought upon me; and which, conſequently, reflected much more diſhonour on themſelves than on me, who was the innocent victim of their barbarity and avarice.—Finding this plan miſcarry, they found means to irritate a young gentleman againſt me, by telling him I had lampooned his miſtreſs;

and

and ſo effectually ſucceeded in the quality of incendiaries that this enraged lover determined to ſieze me next night, as I returned to my lodgings from a friend's houſe that I frequented: with this view, he waited in the ſtreet, attended by two of his companions, to whom he had imparted his deſign of carrying me down to the river, in which he propoſed to have me heartily ducked, notwithſtanding the ſeverity of the weather, it being then about the middle of December.—But this ſtratagem did not ſucceed: for, being apprized of their ambuſh, I got home another way, and, by the help of my landlord's apprentice, diſcharged a volley from the garret window, which did great execution among them; and next day occaſioned ſo much mirth at their expence, that they found themſelves under the neceſſity of leaving the town, until the adventure ſhould be entirely forgotten.—My couſins, (though twice baffled in their expectations) did not, however, deſiſt from perſecuting me, who had now enraged them beyond a poſſibility of forgiveneſs, by detecting their malice, and preventing its effects; neither ſhould I have found them more humane, had I patiently ſubmitted to their rancour, and bore without murmuring the rigour of their unreaſonable hate; for, I have found by experience, that though ſmall favours may be acknowledged, and ſlight injuries atoned, there is no wretch ſo ungrateful as he whom you have moſt generouſly obliged; and no enemy ſo implacable, as thoſe who have done you the greateſt wrong.—Theſe good-natured creatures, therefore, had recourſe to a ſcheme, which conſpired with a piece of bad news I ſoon after received, to give them all the ſatisfaction they deſired: this plan was to debauch the faith of my companion and confident, who betrayed the truſt I repoſed in him, by imparting to them the particulars of my ſmall amours, which they publiſhed, with ſuch exaggerations, that I ſuffered very much in the opinion of every body, and was utterly diſcarded by the dear creatures whoſe names had been called in queſtion.—While I was buſy in tracing out the author of this treachery, that I might not only be revenged on him, but alſo vindicate

my character to my friends, I one day perceived the looks of my landlady much altered, when I went home to dinner, and enquiring into the caufe, fhe fkrewed up her mouth, and fixing her eyes on the ground, told me her hufband had received a letter from Mr. Bowling, with one inclofed for me—fhe was very forry for what had happened, for both my fake and his own.—People fhould be more cautious of their conduct.—She was always afraid his brutal behaviour would bring him into fome misfortune or other.—As for her part fhe fhould be very ready to befriend me; but fhe had a fmall family of her own to maintain.—The world would do nothing for her if fhe fhould come to want—charity begins at home; fhe wifhed I had been bound to fome fubftantial handicraft, fuch as a weaver, or a fhoe-maker, rather than loiter away my time in learning foolifh nonfenfe that would never bring me in a penny—but fome folks are wife, and fome are otherwife.—I was liftening to this myfterious difcourfe, with great amazement, when her hufband entered, and, without fpeaking a fyllable, put both the letters into my hand. I received them trembling, and read what follows:

To Mr. Roger Potion.

"SIR,

"THIS is to let you know that I have quitted the Thunder Man of War; being obliged to fheer off, for killing my Captain, which I did fairly on the beach at Cape Tiberoon, in the ifland of Hifpaniola; having received his fire and returned it, which went through his body:—and I would ferve the beft man fo that ever ftepped between ftem and ftern, if fo be, that he ftruck me, as captain Oakham did. I am, (thank God) fafe among the French, who are very civil, though I don't underftand their lingo, and I hope to be reftored in a little time, for all the great friends and parliamentary intereft of the captain, for I have fent over to my landlord in Deal an account of the whole affair, with our bearings and diftances while we were engaged, whereby I have defired him to lay it before his Majefty, who, (God

(God bleſs him) will not ſuffer an honeſt tar to be wronged.—My love to your ſpouſe, and am

Your loving friend,

And ſervant to command, while

Thomas Bowling."

To RODERIC RANDOM.

"DEAR RORY,

"DON'T be grieved at my miſfortune—but mind your book, my lad. I have got no money to ſend you; but what of that?—Mr. Potion will take care of you, for the love he bears to me: and let you want for nothing, and it ſhall go hard, but I will ſee him one day repaid.—No more at preſent, but reſts

Your dutiful uncle

and ſervant, till death,

Thomas Bowling."

This letter (which, with the other, was dated from Port Louis, in Hiſpaniola) I had no ſooner read, than the apothecary, ſhaking his head, began:——"I have a very great regard for Mr. Bowling, that's certain,—and could be well content—but times are very hard. There's no ſuch thing as money to be got—I believe it is all vaniſhed under ground, for my part.—Beſides, I have been out of pocket already, having entertained you ſince the beginning of this month without receiving a ſixpence,—and God knows if ever I ſhall;—for I believe it will go hard with your uncle.—And, more than that, I was thinking of giving you warning, for I want your apartment for a new 'prentice, whom I expect from the country every hour.—So I deſire you will this week provide yourſelf with another lodging."—The indignation which this harangue inſpired, gave me ſpirits to ſupport my reverſe of fortune; and to tell him, I deſpiſed his mean, ſelfiſh diſpoſition ſo much, that I would rather ſtarve than be beholden to him for one ſingle meal. Upon which, out of my pocket-money, I paid him to the laſt farthing of what I owed, and aſſured him I would not ſleep another night under his roof. This ſaid, I ſallied out in a

transport

tranſport of rage and ſorrow, without knowing whither to fly for ſhelter, having not one friend in the world capable of relieving me, and only three ſhillings in my purſe. After giving way for a few minutes to the dictates of my rage, I went and hired a ſmall bed-room, at the rate of one ſhilling and ſixpence per week, which I was obliged to pay per advance, before the landlord would receive me: thither I removed my luggage; and next morning got up, with a view of craving the advice and aſſiſtance of a perſon who had on all occaſions loaded me with careſſes, and made frequent offers of friendſhip, while I was under no neceſſity of accepting them. He received me with his wonted affability, and inſiſted on my breakfaſting with him, a favour which I did not think fit to refuſe. But, when I communicated the occaſion of my viſit, he appeared ſo diſconcerted, that I concluded him wonderfully affected with the miſery of my condition, and looked upon him as a man of the moſt extenſive ſympathy and benevolence. He did not leave me long under this miſtake; for, recovering himſelf from his confuſion, he told me, he was grieved at my misfortune, and deſired to know what had paſſed between my landlord, Mr. Potion, and me. Whereupon I recounted the converſation; and, when I repeated the anſwer I made to his ungenerous remonſtrance, with regard to my leaving his houſe, this pretended friend affected a ſtare, and exclaimed, " is it poſſible you could behave ſo ill to the man who had treated you ſo kindly all along?"—My ſurprize at hearing this, was not at all affected; and, I gave him to underſtand, with ſome warmth, that I did not imagine he would ſo unreaſonably eſpouſe the cauſe of a ſcoundrel, who ought to be expelled from every ſocial community. This heat of mine gave him all the advantage he deſired over me, and our diſcourſe (after much altercation) concluded in his deſiring never to ſee me again in that place; to which deſire I yielded my conſent, aſſuring him, that had I been as well acquainted with his principles formerly, as I was now, he never ſhould have had an opportunity of making that requeſt—And thus we parted.

On

On my return, I met my comrade 'Squire Gawky, whom his father had ſent, ſome time ago, to town, for his improvement in writing, dancing, fencing, and other modiſh qualifications. As I had lived with him, ſince his arrival, on the footing of our old intimacy, I made no ſcruple of informing him of the lowneſs of my circumſtances, and aſking a ſmall ſupply of money to anſwer my preſent expence; upon which he pulled out a handful of halfpence, with a ſhilling or two among them, and ſwore that was all he had to keep his pocket till next quarter-day, he having loſt the greateſt part of his allowance the night before at billiards. Though his aſſertion might very well be true, I was extremely mortified at his indifference, for he neither expreſſed any ſympathy for my miſhap, nor deſire of alleviating my diſtreſs; and accordingly I left him, without uttering one word; but when I afterwards underſtood that he was the perſon who had formerly betrayed me to the malice of my couſins, to whom likewiſe he had carried the tidings of my forlorn ſituation, which afforded them great matter of triumph and exultation, I determined with myſelf to call him to a ſevere account; for which purpoſe I borrowed a ſword, and wrote a challenge, deſiring him to meet me at a certain time and place, that I might have an opportunity of puniſhing his perfidy, at the expence of his blood. He accepted the invitation, and I betook myſelf to the field, though not without feeling conſiderable repugnance to the combat, which frequently attacked me in cold ſweats by the way; but the deſire of revenge, the ſhame of retracting, and hope of conqueſt, conſpired to repel theſe unmanly ſymptoms of fear, and I appeared on the plain with a good grace; there I waited an hour beyond the time appointed, and was not ill pleaſed to find he had no mind to meet me: becauſe I ſhould have an opportunity of expoſing his cowardice, diſplaying my own courage, and of beating him ſoundly, whereſoever I ſhould find him, without any dread of the conſequence——Elevated with theſe ſuggeſtions, which entirely baniſhed all thoughts of my deplorable condition, I went directly to Gawky's lodgings,

ngs, where I was informed of his precipitate retreat, he having ſet out for the country in leſs than an hour afterhe had received my billet: and I was vain enough to have the whole ſtory inſerted in the news, although I was fain to ſell a gold-laced hat to my landlord, for leſs than half-price, to defray the expence, and contribute to my ſubſiſtence.

CHAP. VII.

I am entertained by Mr. Crab—A Deſcription of him—I acquire the Art of Surgery—Conſult Crab's Diſpoſition—Become neceſſary to him—An Accident happens—He adviſes me to launch into the World—Aſſiſts me with Money—I ſet out for London.

THE fumes of my reſentment being diſſipated, as well as the vanity of my ſucceſs, I found myſelf deſerted to all the horrors of extreme want, and avoided by mankind as a creature of a different ſpecies, or rather as a ſolitary being, no ways comprehended within the ſcheme or protection of Providence. My deſpair had rendered me almoſt quite ſtupefied, when I was one day told that a gentleman deſired to ſee me at a certain public houſe, whither I immediately repaired; and was introduced to one Mr. Launcelot Crab, a ſurgeon in town, who was engaged, with two more, in drinking a liquor, called *pop-in*, compoſed by mixing a quartern of brandy, with a quart of ſmall beer. Before I relate the occaſion of this meſſage, I believe it will not be diſagreeable to the reader if I deſcribe the gentleman who ſent for me, and mention ſome circumſtances of his character and conduct, which may illuſtrate what follows, and account for his behaviour to me.

This member of the faculty was aged fifty, about five feet high, and ten round the belly; his face was capacious as a full moon, and much of the complexion of a mulberry; his noſe, reſembling a powder horn, was ſwelled to an enormous ſize, and ſtudded over with carbuncles; and his little grey eyes reflected the rays in ſuch an oblique manner that, while he looked a perſon

ſon full in the face, one would have imagined he was admiring the buckle of his ſhoe.—He had long entertained an implacable reſentment againſt Potion, who, though a young practitioner, was better employed than he, and once had the aſſurance to perform a cure, whereby he diſappointed and diſgraced the prognoſtic of the ſaid Crab—This quarrel, which was at one time upon the point of being made up by the interpoſition and mediation of friends, had been lately inflamed beyond a poſſibility of reconciliation by the reſpective wives of the opponents, who, chancing to meet at a chriſtening, diſagreed about precedence, proceeded from invectives to blows, and were, with great difficulty, by the goſſips, prevented from converting the occaſion of joy into a ſcene of lamentation.

The difference between theſe rivals was in the height of rancour when I received the meſſage of Crab, who received me as civilly as I could have expected from one of his diſpoſition; and, after deſiring me to ſit, enquired into the particulars of my leaving the houſe of Potion; which, when I had related, he ſaid, with a malicious grin—"There's a ſneaking dog!—I always thought him a fellow without a ſoul, d—n me! a canting ſcoundrel, who has crept into buſineſs by his hypocriſy, and kiſſing the a—ſe of every body."—"Aye, aye, (ſays another, one may ſee with half an eye, that the raſcal has no honeſty in him, by his going ſo regularly to church." This ſentence was confirmed by a third, who aſſured his companions that Potion was never known to be diſguiſed in liquor but once, at a meeting of the godly, where he had diſtinguiſhed himſelf by an *ex tempore* prayer, an hour long.—After this preamble Crab addreſſed himſelf to me in theſe words, "Well, my lad, I have heard a good character of you, and I'll do for you—You may ſend your things to my houſe when you pleaſe—I have given orders for your reception.—Z—ds! what does the booby ſtare at?—If you have no mind to embrace my courteous offer, you may let it alone and be d—n'd."—I anſwered, with a ſubmiſſive bow, that I was far from

rejecting

rejecting his friendly offer, which I would immediately accept, as ſoon as he ſhould inform me on what footing I was to be entertained—" What footing!— d—n my blood, (cried he) d'ye expect to have a footman and a couple of horſes kept for you?"—" No, Sir: (I replied) my expectations are not quite ſo ſanguine.—That I may be as little burthenſome as poſſible, I would willingly ſerve in your ſhop, by which means I may ſave you the expenſe of a journeyman, or porter at leaſt, for I underſtand a little pharmacy, having employed ſome of my leiſure hours in the practice of that art, while I lived with Mr. Potion; neither am I altogether ignorant of ſurgery, which I have ſtudied with great pleaſure and application.—" O ho! you did? (ſays Crab.) Gentlemen, here is a complete artiſt?—Studied ſurgery! what? In books, I ſuppoſe.—I ſhall have you diſputing with me one of thoſe days, on points of my profeſſion.—You can already account for muſcular motion (I warrant) and explain the myſtery of the brain and nerves—ha!—You are too learned for me, d—n me.—But let's hear no more of this ſtuff:—can you bleed and give a clyſter, ſpread a plaiſter, and prepare a potion?"—Upon my anſwering in the affirmative, he ſhook his head, telling me, he believed he ſhould have little good of me, for all my promiſes;—but, however, he would take me in for the ſake of charity.—I was accordingly that very night admitted to his houſe, and had an apartment aſſigned to me in the garret, which I was fain to put up with, notwithſtanding the mortification my pride ſuffered in this change of circumſtances. I was ſoon convinced of the real motives which induced Crab to receive me in this manner; for, beſides the gratification of his revenge, by expoſing the ſelfiſhneſs of his antagoniſt, in oppoſition to his own generoſity, which was all affectation, he had occaſion for a young man who underſtood ſomething of the profeſſion, to fill up the place of his eldeſt apprentice, lately dead, not without violent ſuſpicion of foul play from his maſter's brutality. The knowledge of this circumſtance, together with his daily

 behaviour

behaviour to his wife, and the young apprentice, did not at all contribute to my enjoying my new ſituation with eaſe; however, as I did not perceive how I could beſtow myſelf to better advantage, I reſolved to ſtudy Crab's temper with all the application, and manage it with all the addreſs in my power.—And it was not long before I found out a ſtrange peculiarity of humour, which governed his behaviour towards all his dependants. I obſerved, when he was pleaſed, he was ſuch a niggard of his ſatisfaction, that if his wife or ſervants betrayed the leaſt ſymptom of participation, he was offended to an inſupportable degree of choler and fury, the effects of which they ſeldom failed to feel.—And, when his indignation was rouſed, ſubmiſſion and ſoothing always exaſperated it beyond the bounds of reaſon and humanity.—I therefore purſued a contrary plan; and one day, when he honoured me with the names of ignorant whelp, and lazy raggamuffin—I boldly replied, I was neither ignorant nor lazy, ſince I both underſtood and performed my buſineſs as well as he could do for his ſoul, neither was it juſt to call me raggamuffin, for I had a whole coat on my back, and was deſcended from a better family than any he could boaſt an alliance with. He gave tokens of great amazement at this aſſurance of mine, and ſhook his cane over my head, regarding me all the time, with a countenance truly diabolical. Although I was terribly ſtartled at his menacing looks and poſture, I yet had reflection enough left, to convince me I had gone too far to retract, and that this was the critical minute that muſt decide my future lot in his ſervice; I therefore ſnatched up the peſtle of a mortar, and ſwore, if he offered to ſtrike me without a cauſe, I ſhould ſee whether his ſkull or my weapon was hardeſt. He continued ſilent for ſome time, and at laſt broke forth into theſe ejaculations.—"This is fine uſage from a ſervant to a maſter,—very fine!—damnation!—but, no matter, you ſhall pay for this, you dog, you ſhall.—I'll do your buſineſs—yes, yes, I'll teach you to lift your hand againſt me."—So ſaying, he retired, and left me under

dreadful

dreadful apprehenſions, which vaniſhed entirely at our next meeting, when he behaved with unuſual complacency, and treated me with a glaſs of punch after dinner. By this conduct, I got the aſcendency over him in a ſhort time, and became ſo neceſſary to him, in managing his buſineſs, while he was engaged at the bottle, that fortune began to wear a kinder aſpect; and I conſoled myſelf for the diſregard of my former acquaintance, with the knowledge I daily imbibed, by a cloſe application to the duties of my employment, in which I ſucceeded beyond my own expectation.—I was on very good terms with my maſter's wife, whoſe eſteem I acquired and cultivated, by repreſenting Mrs. Potion in the moſt ridiculous lights my ſatyrical talents could invent, as well as by rendering her ſome chriſtian offices, when ſhe had been too familiar with the dram bottle, to which ſhe had oftentimes recourſe for conſolation, under the affliction ſhe ſuffered from a barbarous huſband.—In this manner I lived, without hearing the leaſt tidings of my uncle, for the ſpace of two years, during which time I kept little or no company, being neither in a humour to reliſh, nor in a capacity to maintain, much acquaintance: for the Nabal, my maſter, allowed me no wages; and the ſmall perquiſites of my ſtation ſcarce ſupplied me with the common neceſſaries of life.—I was no longer a pert unthinking coxcomb, giddy with popular applauſe, and elevated with the extravagance of hope; my misfortunes had taught me how little the careſſes of the world, during a man's proſperity, are to be valued by him; and how ſeriouſly and expeditiouſly he ought to ſet about making himſelf independent of them. My preſent appearance, therefore, was the leaſt of my care, which was wholly engroſſed in laying up a ſtock of inſtruction that might ſecure me againſt the caprice of fortune for the future. I became ſuch a ſloven, and contracted ſuch an air of auſterity, that every body pronounced me creſt-fallen; and Gawky returned to town without running any riſque from my reſentment, which was by this time pretty much cooled, and reſtrained by prudential reaſons ſo ef-

 fectually

fectually, that I never so much as thought of obtaining satisfaction for the injuries he had done me.—When I deemed myself sufficiently master of my business, I began to cast about for an opportunity of launching into the world, in hope of finding some provision that might make amends for the difficulties I had undergone; but, as this could not be effected without a small sum of money to equip me for the field, I was in the utmost perplexity how to raise it, well knowing that Crab, for his own sake, would never put me in condition to leave him, when his interest was so much concerned in my stay.—But a small accident, which happened about this time, determined him in my favour.—This was no other than the pregnancy of his maid-servant, who declared her situation to me, assuring me at the same time, that I was the occasion of it. Although I had no reason to question the truth of this imputation, I was not ignorant of the familiarities which had passed between her master and her; taking the advantage of which, I represented to her the folly of laying the burden at my door, when she might dispose of it to much better purpose with Mr. Crab: She listened to my advice, and next day acquainted him with the pretended success of their mutual endeavours.—He was far from being overjoyed at this proof of his vigour, which, he foresaw, might have very troublesome consequences; not that he dreaded any domestic grumblings and reproaches from his wife, whom he kept in perfect subjection; but because he knew it would furnish his rival Potion with a handle for insulting and undermining his reputation, there being no scandal equal to that of uncleanness, in the opinion of those who inhabit the part of the island where he lived.——He therefore took a resolution worthy of himself, which was, to persuade the girl that she was not with child, but only afflicted with a disorder incident to young women, which he could easily remove: with this view (as he pretended) he prescribed her such medicines, as he thought would infallibly procure abortion; but in this scheme he was disappointed, for the maid being advertised by

me of his deſign, and at the ſame time well acquainted with her own condition, abſolutely refuſed to follow his directions; and threatened to publiſh her ſituation to the world, if he would not immediately take ſome method of providing for the important occaſion, which ſhe expected in a few months. It was not long before I gueſſed the reſult of his deliberation, by his addreſſing himſelf to me (one day) in this manner; "I am ſurpriſed that a young fellow like you diſcovers no inclination to puſh his fortune in the world.—Before I was your age, I was broiling on the coaſt of Guinea.—Damme! what's to hinder you from profiting by the war, which will certainly be declared in a ſhort time againſt Spain? you may eaſily go on board a king's ſhip in quality of a ſurgeon's mate, where you will certainly ſee a great deal of practice, and ſtand a good chance of getting prize-money." I laid hold of this declaration, which I had long wiſhed for, and aſſured him I would follow his advice with pleaſure, if it was in my power; but that it was impoſſible for me to embrace an opportunity of that kind, as I had no friend to advance a little money, to ſupply me with what neceſſaries I ſhould want, and defray the expences of my journey to London. He told me, that few neceſſaries were required; and as for the expence of my journey, he would lend me money, ſufficient not only for that purpoſe, but alſo to maintain me comfortably in London, until I ſhould procure a warrant for my proviſion on board of ſome ſhip.—I gave him a thouſand thanks for his obliging offer (although I was very well appriſed of his motive, which was no other than a deſign to lay the baſtard to my charge, after my departure;) and accordingly ſet out in a few weeks for London; my whole fortune conſiſting of one ſuit of clothes, half a dozen of ruffled ſhirts, as many plain; two pair of worſted, and a like number of thread ſtockings; a caſe of pocket inſtruments, a ſmall edition of Horace, Wiſeman's Surgery, and ten guineas in caſh; for which Crab took my bond, bearing 5 per cent intereſt; at the ſame time he gave me a letter to the

Member

Member of Parliament for our Town, which, he said, would do my business effectually.

CHAP VIII.

I Arrive at Newcastle—Meet with my old School-Fellow Strap—We determine to walk together to London—Set out on our Journey—Put up at a solitary Ale-house—Are disturbed by a strange Adventure in the Night.

THERE is no such convenience as a waggon in this country, and my finances were too weak to support the expence of hiring a horse; I determined, therefore, to set out with the carriers, who transport goods from one place to another on horseback; and this scheme I accordingly put in execution, on the first day of November 1739, sitting upon a pack saddle between two baskets; one of which contained my goods in a knapsack. But by the time we arrived at Newcastle upon Tyne, I was so fatigued with the tediousness of the carriage, and benumbed with the coldness of the weather, that I resolved to travel the rest of my journey on foot, rather than proceed in such a disagreeable manner.

The hostler of the inn at which we put up, understanding I was bound for London, advised me to take my passage in a collier, which would be both cheap and expeditious, and withal much easier than to walk upwards of three hundred miles through deep roads, in the winter time; a journey which he believed I had not strength enough to perform.—I was almost persuaded to take his advice, when, one day, stepping into a barber's shop to be shaved, the young man, while he lathered my face, accosted me thus: "Sir, I presume you are a Scotchman." I answered in the affirmative.—"Pray, (continued he) from what part of Scotland?"—I no sooner told him, than he discovered great emotion, and not confining his operation to my chin and upper lip, he smeared my whole face with great agitation.—I was so offended at this profusion, that starting up, I asked him what the d—l he meant by using me so?—He begged pardon

pardon, telling me his joy at meeting with a countryman had occaſioned ſome confuſion in him: and craved my name.—But, when I declared my name was Random, he exclaimed in a rapture, "How! Rory Random?" The ſame I replied, looking at him with aſtoniſhment. "What, cried he, don't you know your old ſchool fellow, Hugh Strap?" At that inſtant recollecting his face, I flew into his arms, and in the tranſport of my joy, gave him back one half of the ſuds he had ſo laviſhly beſtowed on my countenance; ſo that we made a very ludicrous appearance, and furniſhed a great deal of mirth for his maſter and ſhopmates, who were witneſſes of this ſcene.—When our mutual careſſes were over, I ſat down again to be ſhaved, but the poor fellow's nerves were ſo diſcompoſed by this unexpected meeting, that his hand could ſcarcely hold the razor, with which (nevertheleſs) he found means to cut me in three places, in as many ſtrokes. His maſter, perceiving his diſorder, bade another ſupply his place, and, after the operation was performed, gave Strap leave to paſs the reſt of the day with me.—We retired immediately to my lodgings, where calling for ſome beer, I deſired to be informed of his adventures, which contained nothing more, than that his maſter dying before his time was out, he had come to Newcaſtle about a year ago, in expectation of journey-work, along with three young fellows of his acquaintance who worked in the keels; that he had the good fortune of being employed by a civil maſter, with whom he intended to ſtay till the ſpring, at which time he intended to go to London, where he did not doubt of finding encouragement.—When I communicated to him my ſituation and deſign, he did not approve of my taking a paſſage by ſea, by reaſon of the danger of a winter voyage, which is very hazardous along that coaſt, as well as the precariouſneſs of the wind, which might poſſibly detain me a great while, to the no ſmall detriment of my fortune: whereas, if I would venture by land, he would bear me company, carry my baggage all the way; and if we ſhould be fatigued before we could perform the journey,

journey, it would be no hard matter for us to find on the road, either return-horſes, or waggons, of which we might take the advantage for a trifling expence.—I was ſo raviſhed at this propoſal, that I embraced him affectionately, and aſſured him he might command my purſe to the laſt farthing; but he gave me to underſtand he had ſaved money ſufficient to anſwer his own occaſions, and that he had a friend in London, who would ſoon introduce him into buſineſs, in that capital; and might poſſibly have it in his power to ſerve me alſo.

Having concerted the plan, and ſettled our affairs that night, we departed next morning by day-break, armed with a good cudgel each (my companion being charged with the furniture of us both, crammed into one knapſack;) and our money ſewed between the lining and waiſtband of our breeches, except ſome looſe ſilver for our immediate expence on the road.—We travelled all day at a round pace, but being ignorant of the proper ſtages, were benighted at a good diſtance from any inn, ſo that we were compelled to take up our lodging at a ſmall hedge ale houſe, that ſtood on a bye-road, about half a mile from the highway: There we found a pedlar of our own country, in whoſe company we regaled ourſelves with bacon and eggs, and a glaſs of good ale, before a comfortable fire, converſing all the while very ſociably with the landlord and his daughter, an hale buxom laſs, who entertained us with great good humour, and in whoſe affection I was vain enough to believe I had made ſome progreſs. About eight o'clock we were all three, at our own deſire, ſhewn into an apartment, furniſhed with two beds, in one of which Strap and I betook ourſelves to reſt, and the pedlar occupied the other, though not before he had prayed a conſiderable time *ex tempore*, ſearched into every corner of the room, and faſtened the door on the inſide with a ſtrong iron ſcrew, which he carried about with him for that uſe.—I ſlept very ſound till midnight, when I was diſturbed by a violent motion of the bed, which ſhook under me with a continual tremor.—Alarmed at this phenomenon

non, I jogged my companion, whom, to my no ſmall amazement, I found drenched in ſweat, and quaking through every limb: he told me with a low faultering voice, that we were undone; for there was a bloody highwayman with loaded piſtols in the next room; then bidding me make as little noiſe as poſſible, he directed me to a ſmall chink in the board petition, through which I could ſee a thickſet brawny fellow, with a fierce countenance, ſitting at a table with our young landlady, having a bottle of ale, and a brace of piſtols before him. I liſtened with great attention, and heard him ſay in a terrible tone; "d—n that ſon of a bitch, Smack, the coachman!—he has ſerved me a fine trick, indeed!—but d——tion ſieze me, if I don't make him repent it! I'll teach the ſcoundrel to give intelligence to others, while he is under articles with me."—Our landlady endeavoured to appeaſe this exaſperated robber, by ſaying he might be miſtaken in Smack, who, perhaps, kept no correſpondence with the other gentleman that robbed his coach,—and, that if an accident had diſappointed him to day, he might ſoon find opportunities enough to atone for his loſt trouble.—"I'll tell thee what, my dear Bett (replied he) I never had, nor ever will, while my name is Rifle, have ſuch a glorious booty as I miſſed to day.—Z—ds! there was 400l. in caſh, to recruit men for the king's ſervice, beſides the jewels, watches, ſwords and money belonging to the paſſengers;—had it been my fortune to have got clear off with ſo much treaſure, I would have purchaſed a commiſſion in the army, and made you an officer's lady, you jade, I would."—"Well, well, (cries Betty) we muſt truſt to Providence for that; but did you find nothing worth taking, which eſcaped the other gentleman of the road!"—"Not much, faith, (ſaid the lover) I gleaned a few things,—ſuch as a pair of pops, ſilver mounted, (here they are) I took them loaded from the Captain who had the charge of the money, together with a gold watch which he had concealed in his breeches.—I likewiſe found ten Portugal pieces in the ſhoes of a quaker, whom

whom the ſpirit moved to revile me with great bitterneſs and devotion; but what I value myſelf moſtly for, is this here purchaſe, a gold ſnuff box, my girl, with a picture on the inſide of the lid: which I untied out of the tail of a pretty lady's ſmock."—Here, as the devil would have it, the pedlar ſnored ſo loud, that the highwayman, ſnatching his piſtols, ſtarted up, crying, "Hell and d—n—n! I am betrayed, who's that in the next room?" Mrs. Betty told him, he need not be uneaſy, they were only three poor wearied travellers, who miſſing the road, had taken up their lodging in the houſe, and were aſleep long ago.—"Travellers! (ſays he,) ſpies, you b—ch! but no matter—I'll ſend them all to hell in an inſtant."—He accordingly ran towards our door; when his ſweetheart interpoſing, aſſured him there was only a couple of poor young Scotchmen, who were too raw and ignorant to give him the leaſt cauſe of ſuſpicion; and the third was a preſbyterian pedlar of the ſame nation, who had often lodged in the houſe before.—This declaration ſatisfied the thief, who ſwore he was glad there was a pedlar, for he wanted ſome linen—Then, in a jovial manner, he put about the glaſs, mingling his diſcourſe to Betty, with careſſes and familiarities that ſpoke him very happy in his amours. During that part of the converſation which regarded us, Strap had crept under the bed, where he lay in the agonies of fear; ſo that it was with great difficulty I purſuaded him our danger was over, and prevailed on him to wake the pedlar, and inform him of what he had ſeen and heard.—The itinerant merchant no ſooner felt ſomebody ſhaking him by the ſhoulder, than he ſtarted up, calling as loud as he could,—"Thieves, thieves! Lord have mercy on us." And Rifle, alarmed at this exclamation, jumped up, cocked one of his piſtols, and turned towards the door, to kill the firſt man who ſhould enter; for he verily believed himſelf beſet; when his Dulcinea, after an immoderate fit of laughter, perſuaded him, that the poor pedlar, dreaming of thieves, had only cried out in his ſleep.—

Mean-

Meanwhile, my comrade had undeceived our fellow-lodger, and informed him of his reafon for difturbing him; upon which getting up foftly, he peeped through the hole, and was fo terrified with what he faw, that falling down on his bare knees, he put up a long petition to heaven, to deliver him from the hands of that ruffian, and promifed never to defraud a cuftomer for the future of the value of a pin's point, provided he might be refcued from the prefent danger.—Whether or not the difburthening his confcience afforded him any eafe, I know not; but he flipped into bed again, and lay very quiet until the robber and his miftrefs were afleep, and fnored in concert; then, rifing foftly, he untied a rope that was round his pack, which, making faft to one end of it, he opened the window with as little noife as poffible, and lowered the goods into the yard with great dexterity: then he moved gently to our bed-fide, and bade us farewel, telling us, that as we ran no rifk, we might take our reft with great confidence, and, in the morning, affure our landlord that we knew nothing of his efcape: and, laftly, fhaking us by the hands, and wifhing us all manner of fuccefs, he let himfelf drop from the window without any danger, for the ground was not above a yard from his feet as he hung on the outfide. Although I did not think proper to accompany him in his flight, I was not at all free from apprehenfion, when I reflected on what might be the effect of the highwayman's difappointment; as he certainly intended to make free with the pedlar's ware. Neither was my companion at more eafe in his mind; but on the contrary, fo poffeffed with the dreadful idea of Rifle, that he folicited me ftrongly to follow our countryman's example, and fo elude the fatal refentment of that terrible adventurer, who would certainly wreak his vengeance on us, as accomplices of the pedlar's elopement.—But I reprefented to him the danger of giving Rifle caufe to think we knew his profeffion, and fuggefted, that if ever he fhould meet us again on the road, he would look upon us as dangerous acquaintance,

tance, and find it his intereſt to put us out of the way.—I told him, withal, my confidence in Betty's good nature, in which he acquieſced; and during the remaining part of the night, we concerted a proper method of behaviour, to render us unſuſpected in the morning.

It was no ſooner day, than Betty, entering our chamber, and perceiving our window open, cried out, "Odds bobs! ſure you Scotchmen muſt have hot conſtitutions to lie all night with the window open, in ſuch cold weather."—I feigned to ſtart out of ſleep, and withdrawing the curtain, called "What's the matter?" When ſhe ſhewed me, I affected ſurpriſe, and ſaid, "Bleſs me the window was ſhut when we went to bed."—"I'll be hanged, ſaid ſhe, if Sawny Waddle, the pedlar, has not got up in a dream and done it, for I heard him very opſtropulous in his ſleep.—Sure I put a chamber-pot under his bed."—With theſe words ſhe advanced to the bed in which he lay, and finding the ſheets cold, exclaimed, "Good lack a daiſy! the rogue is fled!"—"Fled, (cried I, with feigned amazement), God forbid!—Sure, he has not robbed us."—Then ſpringing up, I laid hold of my breeches, and emptied all my looſe money into my hand; which having reckoned, I ſaid, heaven be praiſed, our money is all ſafe: —Strap, look to the knapſack."—He did ſo, and found all was right.—Upon which we aſked with ſeeming concern, if he had ſtole nothing belonging to the houſe? —"No, no, replied ſhe, he has ſtole nothing but his reckoning;" which, it ſeems, this pious pedlar had forgot to diſcharge, in the midſt of his devotion.—Betty, after a moment's pauſe, withdrew, and immediately we could hear her waken Rifle, who no ſooner heard of Waddle's flight, than he jumped out of bed and dreſſed, venting a thouſand execrations, and vowing to murder the pedlar, if ever he ſet eyes on him again; For, ſaid he, the ſcoundrel has by this time raiſed the hue and cry againſt me."—Having dreſſed himſelf in a hurry, he mounted his horſe, and for that time rid us of his company, and a thouſand fears that were the conſe-
quence

quence of it—While we were at breakfaſt, Betty endeavoured, by all the cunning ſhe was miſtreſs of, to learn whether or no we ſuſpected our fellow lodger, whom we ſaw take horſe; but as we were on our guard, we anſwered her by ſly queſtions with a ſimplicity ſhe could not diſtruſt; when all of a ſudden we heard the trampling of a horſe's feet at the door. This noiſe alarmed Strap ſo much; whoſe imagination was wholly engroſſed by the image of Rifle, that, with a countenance as pale as milk he cried—"O Lord! there's the highwayman returned!" Our landlady ſtaring at theſe words, ſaid, "What highwayman, young man?—Do you think any highwaymen harbour here?"—Though I was very much diſconcerted at this piece of indiſcretion in Strap, I had preſence of mind enough to tell her we had met a horſeman the day before, whom Strap had fooliſhly ſuppoſed to be a highwayman, becauſe he rode with piſtols: and that he had been terrified at the ſound of a horſe's feet ever ſince.—She forced a ſmile at the ignorance and timidity of my comrade; but I could perceive (not without great concern) that this account was not at all ſatisfactory to her.

CHAP. IX.

We proceed on our Journey—Are overtaken by an Highwayman, who fires at Strap, is prevented from ſhooting me by a company of Horſemen, who ride in purſuit of him.—Strap is put to Bed at an Inn.—Adventures at that Inn.

AFTER having paid our ſcore, and taken leave of our hoſteſs, who embraced me tenderly at parting, we proceeded on our journey, bleſſing ourſelves we had come off ſo well. We had not walked above five miles, when we obſerved a man on horſeback galloping after us, whom we in a ſhort time recognized to be no other than this formidable hero who had already given us ſo much vexation.—He ſtopped hard by me, and aſked if I knew who he was?—My aſtoniſhment had diſconcerted me ſo much, that I did not hear his queſ-

tion, which he repeated with a volley of oaths and threats; but I remained as mute as before. Strap, seeing my discomposure, fell upon his knees in the mud, uttering, with a lamentable voice, these words: "For C—st's sake, have mercy upon us, Mr. Rifle, we know you very well."—"O, ho! (cried the thief) you do! But you never shall be evidence against me in this world, you dog!"—So saying, he drew a pistol, and fired it at the unfortunate shaver, who fell flat upon the ground, without speaking one word.—My comrade's fate, and my own situation, rivetted me to the place where I stood, deprived of all sense and reflection; so that I did not make the least attempt either to run away, or deprecate the wrath of this barbarian, who snapped a second pistol at me; but before he had time to prime again, perceiving a company of horsemen coming up, he rode off, and left me standing motionless as a statue, in which posture I was found by those whose appearance had saved my life. This company consisted of three men in livery, well armed, with an officer, who (as I afterwards learned) was the person from whom Rifle had taken the pocket pistols the day before; and who, making known his misfortune to a nobleman he met on the road, assuring him, his non-resistance was altogether owing to his consideration for the ladies in the coach, procured the assistance of his lordship's servants to go in quest of the plunderer. This holiday captain scampered up to me with great address, and asked, who fired the pistol which he had heard. As I had not yet recovered my reason, he, before I could answer, observed a body laying on the ground: at which sight his colour changed, and he pronounced with a faultering tongue, "Gentlemen, here's murder committed! Let us alight."—"No, no, said one of his followers, let us rather pursue the murderer.—Which way went he, young man?"—By this time I had recollected myself so far as to tell them, that he could not be a quarter of a mile before; and to beg of one of

them

them to aſſiſt me in conveying the corpſe of my friend to the next houſe, in order to its being interred.—The captain, foreſeeing that in caſe he ſhould purſue, he muſt ſoon come to action, began to curb his horſe, and gave him the ſpur at the ſame time, which treatment making the creature rear up and ſnort, he called out his horſe was frightened, and would not proceed; at the ſame time wheeling him round and round, ſtroaking his neck, whiſtling and wheedling him, "Sirrah, Sirrah—gently, gently," &c.—"Z——ds! (cried one of the ſervants) ſure my lord's Sorrel is not reſty!"—With theſe words he beſtowed a laſh on his buttock, and Sorrel diſdaining the rein, ſprung forward with the captain, at a pace that would have ſoon brought him up with the robber, had not the girth (happily for him) given way, by which means he landed in the dirt; and two of his attendants continued their purſuit, without minding his ſituation. Meanwhile one of the three who remained at my deſire, turning the body of Strap, in order to ſee the wound which had killed him, found him ſtill warm, and breathing; upon which I immediately let him blood, and ſaw him, with inexpreſſible joy, recover; he having received no other wound that what his fear had inflicted.—Having raiſed him upon his legs, we walked together to an inn, about half a mile from the place, where Strap, who was not quite recovered, went to bed; and in a little time, the third ſervant returned with the captain's horſe and furniture, leading him to crawl after us as well as he could. This gentleman of the ſword, upon his arrival, complained grievouſly of the bruiſe occaſioned by his fall; and on the recommendation of the ſervant, who warranted my ability, I was employed to bleed him, for which ſervice he rewarded me with half a crown.

The time between this event and dinner I paſſed in obſerving a game at cards between two farmers, an exciſeman, and a young fellow in a ruſty gown and caſſock, who, as I afterwards underſtood, was curate of a neighbouring pariſh.—It was eaſy to perceive that

the match was not equal; and that the two farmers, who were partners, had to do with a couple of sharpers, who stript them of all their cash in a very short time.——But what surprised me very much was, to hear this clergyman reply to one of the countrymen, who seemed to suspect foul play, in these words:——D—n me, friend, d'ye question my honour?"——I did not at all wonder to find a cheat in canonicals, this being a character frequent in my own country; but I was scandalized at the indecency of his behaviour, which appeared in the oaths he swore, and the bawdy songs which he sung. At last to make amends, in some sort, for the damage he had done to the unwary boors, he pulled out a fiddle from the lining of his gown, and, promising to treat them at dinner, began to play most melodiously, singing in concert all the while.—This good humour of the parson inspired the company with so much glee, that the farmers soon forgot their losses, and all present went to dancing in the yard. While we were agreeably amused in this manner, our musician spying a horseman riding towards the inn, stopt all of a sudden, crying out, "Gad so! gentlemen, I beg your pardon; there's our dog of a doctor coming into the inn."——He immediately concealed his instrument, and ran towards the gate, where he took hold of the vicar's bridle, and helped him off, enquiring very cordially into the state of his health.—This rosy son of the church (who might be about the age of fifty) having alighted, and entrusted the curate with his horse, stalked with great solemnity into the kitchen, where, sitting down by the fire, he called for a bottle of ale and a pipe; scarce deigning an answer to the submissive questions of those who enquired about the welfare of his family.—While he indulged himself in this state, amidst a profound silence, the curate approaching him with great reverence, asked if he would not be pleased to honour us with his company at dinner? To which interrogation he answered in the negative, saying he had been to visit squire Bumkin, who had drank himself

into

into a high fever at the laſt aſſizes; and that he had, on leaving his own houſe, told Betty he ſhould dine at home.——Accordingly, when he had made an end of his bottle and pipe, he roſe, and moved, with prelatical dignity, to the door, where his journeyman ſtood ready with his nag.——He had no ſooner mounted, than the facetious curate coming into the kitchen, held forth in this manner: "There the old raſcal goes, and the D—l go with him.—You ſee how the world wags, gentlemen——By Gad, this rogue of a vicar does not deſerve to live;—and yet he has two livings worth 400*l.* *per annum*, while poor I am fain to do all his drudgery, and ride twenty miles every Sunday to preach, for what? why, truly, for 20*l.* a year.—I ſcorn to boaſt of my own qualifications, but—compariſons are odious. I ſhould be glad to know how this ſwagbellied Doctor deſerves to be more at eaſe than me——He can loll in his elbow chair at home, indulge himſelf in the beſt of victuals and wine, and enjoy the converſation of Betty, his houſe-keeper.—You underſtand me, gentlemen.—Betty is the doctor's poor kinſwoman, and a pretty girl ſhe is: but no matter for that:—aye, and a dutiful girl to her parents, whom ſhe viſits regularly every year; though I muſt own, I could never learn in what country they live.——"My ſervice t'ye gentlemen."——By this time dinner being ready, I waked my companion, and we ate all together with great chearfulneſs. When our meal was ended, and every man's ſhare of the reckoning adjuſted, the curate went out on pretence of ſome neceſſary occaſion, and, mounting his horſe, left the two farmers to ſatisfy the hoſt in the beſt manner they could——We were no ſooner informed of this piece of fineſſe, than the exciſeman, who had been ſilent hitherto, began to open with a malicious grin: "Aye, aye, this is an old trick of Shuffle:——I could not help ſmiling, when he talked of treating.——You muſt know this is a very curious fellow.——He picked up ſome ſcraps of learning while he ſerved young lord Trifle at the univerſity——But what he moſt excels in

is

is pimping. No man knows his talents better than I; for I was *valet de chambre* to ſquire Tattle, an intimate companion of Shuffle's lord.——He got himſelf into a ſcrape, by pawning ſome of his lordſhip's cloaths, on which account he was turned away; but as he was acquainted with ſome particular circumſtances of my lord's conduct, he did not care to exaſperate him too much, and ſo made intereſt for his receiving orders, and afterwards recommended him to the curacy which he now enjoys.——However, the fellow cannot be too much admired for his dexterity in making a comfortable livelihood, in ſpite of ſuch a ſmall allowance.—You hear he plays a good ſtick, and is really diverting company.—Theſe qualifications make him agreeable, wherever he goes;—and as for playing at cards, there is not a man within three counties a match for him:—the truth is, he is a damnable cheat; and can ſhift a card with ſuch addreſs, that it is impoſſible to diſcover him."
——Here he was interrupted by one of the farmers, who aſked why he had not juſtice enough to acquaint them with theſe particulars before they engaged in play?—The exciſeman replied, without any heſitation, that it was none of his buſineſs to intermeddle between man and man: beſides, he did not know they were ignorant of Shuffle's character, which was notorious to the whole country.—This did not ſatisfy the other, who taxed him with abetting and aſſiſting the curate's knavery, and inſiſted on having his ſhare of the winnings returned; this demand the exciſeman as poſitively refuſed, affirming, that whatſoever ſlights Shuffle might practiſe on other occaſions, he was very certain that he had play'd on the ſquare with them, and would anſwer it before any bench in Chriſtendom; ſo ſaying, he got up, and having paid his reckoning, ſneaked off. The landlord thruſting his neck into the paſſage, to ſee if he was gone, ſhook his head, ſaying, Aye! Lord help us! if every ſinner was to have his deſerts.—Well, we victuallers muſt not diſoblige the exciſemen—But I know what.—If parſon Shuffle and he were weighed together

gether, a ſtraw thrown into either ſcale would make the balance kick the beam:—but, maſters, this is under the ro[illegible]" continued Boniface with a whiſper.

CHAP. X.

The Highwayman is taken—We are detained as Evidence againſt him—Proceed to the next Village—He eſcapes—We arrive at another Inn, where we go to Bed—In the Night we are awaked by a dreadful Adventure—Next Night we lodge at the Houſe of a School-maſter—O[illegible] Treatment there.

STRAP and I were about to depart on our journey, when we perceived a croud on the road coming towards us, ſhouting and hallooing all the way. As it approached, we could diſcern a man on horſeback in the middle, with his hands tied behind him, whom we ſoon knew to be Rifle. This highwayman not being ſo well mounted as the two ſervants who went in purſuit of him, was ſoon overtaken, and after having diſcharged his piſtols, made priſoner without any further oppoſition. They were carrying him in triumph, amidſt the acclamations of the country people, to a juſtice of peace in a neighbouring village, but ſtopt at our inn to join their companion, and take refreſhment. When Rifle was diſmounted, and placed in the yard, within a circle of peaſants, armed with pitchforks, I was amazed to ſee what a pitiful dejected fellow he now appeared, who had but a few hours before filled me with ſuch terror and confuſion.——My companion was ſo much encouraged by this alteration in his appearance, that going up to the thief, he preſented his clenched fiſt to his noſe, and declared he would either cudgel or box with the priſoner for a guinea, which he immediately produced, and began to ſtrip—but was diſſuaded from this adventure by me, who repreſented to him the folly of the undertaking, as Rifle was now in the hands of juſtice, which would, no doubt, give us all ſatisfaction enough.—But what made me repent of

our

our impertinent curiosity, was our being detained by the captors, as evidence against him, when we were just going to set forward. However, there was no remedy; we were obliged to comply; and accordingly joined in the cavalcade, which luckily took the same road that we had promised to follow—About the twilight, we arrived at the place of our destination; but as the justice was gone to visit a gentleman in the country, with whom (we understood) he would probably stay all night, the robber was confined in an empty garret three stories high, from which it seemed impossible for him to escape: this, nevertheless, was the case; for next morning, when they went up stairs, to bring him before the justice, the bird was flown, having got out at the window upon the roof, from whence he continued his rout along the top of the adjoining houses, and entered another garret window, where he skulked until the family were asleep, at which time he ventured down stairs, and let himself out by the street door, which was found open. This event was a great disappointment to those that apprehended him, who were flushed with hopes of the reward; but gave me great joy, as I was permitted now to continued my journey without any further molestation—Resolving to make up for the small progress we had hitherto made, we this day travelled with great vigour, and before night reached a market-town, twenty miles from the place from whence we set out in the morning, without meeting any adventure worth notice—Here having taken up our lodging at an inn, I found myself so fatigued, that I began to despair of performing our journey on foot, and desired Strap to enquire if there was any waggon, return-horses, or other cheap carriage in this place, to depart for London the next day.——He was informed, that the waggon from Newcastle to London had halted here two nights ago; and that it would be an easy matter to overtake it, if not the next day, at farthest the day after the next. This piece of news gave us some satisfaction; and, after having made a hearty supper, on hashed

hashed mutton, we were shewn to our room, which contained two beds, the one allotted for us, and the other for a very honest gentleman, who, we were told, was then drinking below. Though we could have very well dispensed with his company, we were glad to submit to this disposition, as there was not another bed empty in the house; and accordingly went to rest, after having secured our baggage under the bolster. About two or three o'clock in the morning, I was waked out of a very profound sleep, by a dreadful noise in the chamber, which did not fail to throw me into an agony of consternation, when I heard these words pronounced with a terrible voice:—"Blood and wounds! run the halbert into the guts of him that's next you, and I'll blow the other's brains out presently."—This dreadful salutation had no sooner reached the ears of Strap, than, starting out of bed, he ran against somebody in the dark, and overturned him in an instant; at the same time bawling out, "Fire! murder! fire!" a cry which in a moment alarmed the whole house, and filled our chamber with a crowd of naked people.—When lights were brought, the occasion of all this disturbance soon appeared; which was no other than our fellow lodger, whom we found lying on the floor scratching his head, with a look testifying the utmost astonishment at the concourse of apparitions that surrounded him.

This honest gentleman was, it seems, a recruiting serjeant; who, having enlisted two country fellows over night, dreamed they had mutinied, and threatened to murder him and the drummer who was along with him. This made such an impression on his imagination, that he got up in his sleep, and expressed himself as above. When our apprehension of danger vanished, the company beheld one another with great surprise and mirth; but what attracted the notice of every one was, our landlady with nothing on her but her shift and a large pair of buckskin breeches with the backside before, which she had slipt on in the hurry, and her husband with

her petticoat about his ſhoulders: one had wrapt himſelf in a blanket, another was covered with a ſheet: and the drummer, who had given his only ſhirt to be waſhed, appeared in *cuerpo*, with the bolſter rolled about his middle.—When this affair was diſcuſſed, every body retired to his own apartment, the Serjeant ſlipt into bed, and my companion and I ſlept without any further diſturbance till morning, when we got up, went to breakfaſt, paid our reckoning, and ſet forward, in expectation of overtaking the waggon: in which hope, however, we were diſappointed for that day. As we exerted ourſelves more than uſual, I found myſelf quite ſpent with fatigue, when we entered a ſmall village in the twilight. We enquired for a public houſe, and were directed to one of a very ſorry appearance. At our entrance the landlord, who ſeemed to be a venerable old man, with long grey hair, roſe from a table placed by a large fire, in a very neat paved kitchen, and, with a chearful countenance, accoſted us in theſe words:—"*Salvete, Pueri, ingredimini.*"—I was not a little pleaſed to hear our hoſt ſpeak Latin, becauſe I was in hopes of recommending myſelf to him by my knowledge in that language; I therefore anſwered without heſitation—"*Diſſolve frigus, ligna ſuper foco—large reponens.*"—I had no ſooner pronounced theſe words than the old gentleman, running towards me, ſhook me by the hand, crying,—"*Fili, me delectiſſime! unde venis?—a ſuperis ni fallor!*"—In ſhort, finding we were both read in the claſſics, he did not know how to teſtify his regard enough, but ordered his daughter, a jolly roſy-cheeked damſel, who was his ſole domeſtic, to bring us a bottle of his *quadrimum*—repeating, from Horace, at the ſame time—"*Deprome quadrimum ſabina O Thaliarche, merum diota.*"—This *quadrimum* was excellent ale of his own brewing, of which he told us he had always an *amphora*, four years old, for the uſe of himſelf and friends.—In the courſe of our converſation, which was interlarded with ſcraps of Latin, we underſtood that this facetious perſon was a ſchoolmaſter, whoſe

whose income being small, he was fain to keep a glass of good liquor for the entertainment of passengers, by which he made a shift to make the two ends of the year meet.—"I am this day, said he, the happiest old fellow in his Majesty's dominions.—My wife, rest her soul, is in heaven. My daughter is to be married next week;—but the two chief pleasures of my life are these (pointing to the bottle and a large edition of Horace that lay on the table.) I am old, 'tis true,—what then? the more reason I should enjoy the small share of life that remains, as my friend Flaccus advises:—*Tu ne quæsieris (scire nefas) quem mihi, quem tibi finem dii dederint.—Carpe diem, quam minimum credito posteri.*"—As he was very inquisitive about our affairs, we made no scruple of acquainting him with our situation; which when he had learned, he enriched us with advices how to behave in the world, telling us that he was no stranger to the deceits of mankind.—In the mean time, he ordered his daughter to lay a fowl to the fire for supper, for he was resolved this night to regale his friends—*permittens divis cætera.*—While our entertainment was preparing, our host recounted the adventures of his own life; which, as they contain nothing remarkable, I forbear to rehearse. When we had fared sumptuously, and drank several bottles of his *quadrimum*, I expressed a desire of going to rest, which was with some difficulty complied with, after that he informed us, that we should overtake the waggon by noon the next day; and that there was room enough in it for half a dozen, for there were only four passengers as yet in that convenience.—Before my comrade and I fell asleep, we had some conversation about the good humour of our landlord, which gave Strap such an idea of his benevolence, that he positively believed we should pay nothing for our lodging and entertainment.—"Don't you observe, (said he) that he has conceived a particular affection for us,—nay, even treated us at supper with extraordinary fare, which, to be sure, we should not of ourselves have called for?"—I was partly of Strap's opinion; but the experience I

had of the world made me ſuſpend my belief till the morning; when, getting up by times, we breakfaſted with our hoſt and his daughter on haſty pudding and ale, and deſired to know what we had to pay—"Biddy will let you know, Gentlemen, (ſaid he) for I never mind theſe matters.—Money matters are beneath the concern of one who lives upon the Horatian plan.—*Creſcentem ſequitur cura pecuniam.*" Meanwhile Biddy, having conſulted a ſlate that hung in the corner, told us our reckoning came to 8*s.* 7*d.*—"Eight ſhillings and ſevenpence (cried Strap) 'tis impoſſible—you muſt be miſtaken, young woman!"—"Reckon again, child, (ſaid her father, very deliberately) perhaps you have miſcounted."—"No indeed, Father, (ſhe replied) I know my buſineſs better."—I could contain my indignation no longer, but ſaid it was an unconſcionable bill, and demanded to know the particulars; upon which the old man got up muttering, "Aye, aye, let us ſee the particulars; that's but reaſonable." And taking pen, ink, and paper, wrote the following *Items:*

	s.	*d.*
To bread and beer	0	6
To a fowl and ſauſages	2	6
To four bottles of *quadrim* . .	2	0
To fire and tobacco	0	7
To lodging	2	0
To breakfaſt	1	0
	8	7

As he had not the appearance of a common publican, and had raiſed a ſort of veneration in me by his demeanor the preceding night, it was not in my power to upbraid him as he deſerved, therefore I contented myſelf with ſaying, I was ſure he did not learn to be an extortioner from Horace. He anſwered, I was but a young man, and did not know the world, or I would not tax him with extortion, whoſe only aim was to live *contentus parvo*, and keep off *importuna pauperies*—My fellow traveller could not ſo eaſily put up with this impoſition; but ſwore

ſwore he ſhould either take one third of the money, or go without.—While we were engaged in this diſpute I perceived the daughter to go out, and conjecturing the occaſion, immediately paid the exorbitant demand, which was no ſooner done than Biddy returned with two ſtout fellows, who came in on pretence of taking their morning draught, but in reality to frighten us into compliance. Juſt as we departed, Strap, who was half diſtracted on account of this piece of expence, went up to the ſchool-maſter, and, grinning in his face, pronounced with great emphaſis; "*Semper avarus eget.*"—To which the pedant replied with a malicious ſmile; "*Animum rege, qui, niſi paret, imperat.*"

CHAP. XI.

We deſcry the Waggon—Get into it—Arrive at an Inn—Our Fellow Travellers deſcribed—A Miſtake is committed by Strap, and produces ſtrange Things.

WE travelled half a mile without exchanging one word; my thoughts being engroſſed by the knavery of the world, to which I muſt be daily expoſed; and the contemplation of my finances, which began ſenſibly to diminiſh.—At length Strap, who could hold no longer, addreſſed me thus:—"Well, fools and their money are ſoon parted.—If my advice had been taken, that old ſkinflint ſhould have been damned before he had got more than the third of his demand.——'Tis a ſure ſign you came eaſily by your money, when you ſquander it away in this manner—Aye, God help you, how many briſly beards muſt I have mowed before I earned four ſhillings and three pence halfpenny, which is all thrown to the dogs!——How many days have I ſat weaving hair, till my toes were numbed by the cold, my fingers cramped, and my noſe as blue as the ſign of the perriwig that hung over the door! What the devil was you afraid of? I would have engaged to box with any one of thoſe fellows that came in, for a guinea.—I'm ſure I have beat ſtouter men than either of them."——And indeed my companion would have fought any body when

his life was in no danger; but he had a mortal averſion to fire-arms, and all inſtruments of death. In order to appeaſe him, I aſſured him, no part of this extraordinary expence ſhould fall upon his ſhoulders; at which declaration he was affronted, and told me, he would have me to know, that although he was a poor barber's boy, he had a ſoul to ſpend his money with the beſt 'ſquire in the land. Having walked all day at a great pace without halting for refreſhment, we deſcried, towards the evening, to our inexpreſſible joy, the waggon, about a quarter of a mile before us; and by that time we reached it, we were both of us ſo weary that I verily believe it would have been impracticable for us to have walked one mile farther.—We therefore bargained with the driver, whoſe name was Joey, to give us a caſt to the next ſtage for a ſhilling; at which place we ſhould meet the maſter of the waggon, with whom we might agree for the reſt of the journey.

Accordingly the convenience ſtopt, and Joey having placed the ladder, Strap (being loaded with our baggage) mounted firſt; but, juſt as he was getting in, a tremendous voice aſſailed his ears in theſe words:—"God's fury! there ſhall no paſſengers come here."—The poor ſhaver was ſo diſconcerted at this exclamation, which both he and I imagined proceeded from the mouth of a giant, that he deſcended with great velocity, and a countenance as white as paper.—Joey perceiving our aſtoniſhment, called, with an arch ſneer, "Waunds, Coptain, whay woan't you ſooffer the poor waggoner to meak a penny?—Coom, coom, young mon, get oop, get oop—never mind the Coptain! I'ſe not afeard of the Coptain."—This was not encouragement ſufficient to Strap, who could not be prevailed upon to venture up again; upon which I attempted, though not without a quaking heart, when I heard the ſame voice muttering like diſtant thunder, "Hell and the devil confound me if I don't make you ſmart for this!" However I crept in, and by accident got an empty place in the ſtraw, which I immediately took poſſeſſion of, with-
out

out being able to difcern the faces of my fellow-travellers in the dark.—Strap following with the knapfack on his back, chanced to take the other fide, and by a jolt of the carriage, pitched directly upon the ftomach of the Captain, who bellowed out in a moft dreadful manner, "Blood and thunder where's my fword?" At thefe words my frighted comrade ftarted up, and at one fpring bounced againft me with fuch force that I thought he was the fuppofed fon of Anak, who intended to prefs me to death.—In the mean time a female voice cried, "Blefs me what's the matter, my dear?"—"The matter (replied the Captain) damn my blood my guts are fqueezed into a pancake by that Scotchman's hump."

Strap, trembling all the while at my back, afked him pardon, and laid the whole blame of what had happened upon the jolting of the waggon; and the woman who fpoke before went on: "Aye, aye, my dear, it is our own fault, we may thank ourfelves for all the inconveniencies we met with——I thank God, I never travelled fo before.—I'm fure if my Lady or Sir John was to know where we are, they would not fleep this night for vexation.—I wifh to God we had wrote for the chariot:——I know we fhall never be forgiven."—"Come, come, my dear, (replied the Captain) it don't fignify fretting now—we fhall laugh it over as a frolick.—I hope you will not fuffer in your health.—I fhall make my Lord very merry with our adventures in the *Diligence*." This difcourfe gave me fuch a high notion of the Captain and his lady, that I durft not venture to join in the converfation; but immediately after another female voice began: "Some people give themfelves a great many needlefs airs——better folks than any here have travelled in waggons before now—Some of us have rode in coaches and chariots with three footmen behind them, without making fo much fufs about it——What then, we are all upon a footing; therefore let's all be fociable and merry.—What do you fay, Ifaac? Is not this a good motion, you doating rogue?——Speak, you old *cent. per cent.* fornicator!—What def-

perate debts are you thinking of?—What mortgage are you planning?—Well, Iſaac, poſitively you ſhall never gain my favour till you turn over a new leaf, grow honeſt, and live like a Gentleman.—In the mean time give me a kiſs, you old fumbler."—Theſe words, accompanied with a hearty ſmack, enlivened the perſon to whom they were addreſſed to ſuch a degree, that he cried in a tranſport, though with a faultering voice, "Ah, you wanton baggage—upon my credit, you are a waggiſh girl, he, he, he."—This laugh introduced a fit of coughing, which almoſt ſuffocated the poor uſurer (ſuch we afterwards found was the profeſſion of this our fellow traveller.) About this time I fell aſleep, and enjoyed a comfortable nap till ſuch time as we arrived at the inn where we put up. Here, having alighted from the waggon, I had an opportunity of viewing the paſſengers in order as they entered. The firſt who appeared was a briſk airy girl, about twenty years old, with a ſilver laced hat on her head, inſtead of a cap, a blue ſtuff riding ſuit, trimmed with ſilver, very much tarniſhed, and a whip in her hand. After her came limping an old man, with a worſted night-cap, buttoned under his chin, and a broad brimmed hat ſlouched over it, an old ruſty blue cloak tied about his neck, under which appeared a brown ſurtout that covered a threadbare coat and waiſtcoat, and, as we afterwards diſcerned, a dirty flannel jacket.——His eyes were hollow, bleared, and gummy; his face was ſhrivelled into a thouſand wrinkles, his gums were deſtitute of teeth, his noſe ſharp and drooping, his chin pecked and prominent, ſo that when he mumped or ſpoke they approached one another like a pair of nut-crackers; he ſupported himſelf on an ivory headed cane, and his whole figure was a juſt emblem of winter, famine, and avarice. But how was I ſurpriſed when I beheld the formidable Captain in the ſhape of a little thin creature, about the age of forty, with a long withered viſage, very much reſembling that of a baboon, through the upper part of which too little grey eyes peeped. He wore his own hair

hair in a queue that reached to his rump, which immoderate length, I ſuppoſe, was the occaſion of a baldneſs that appeared on the crown of his head, when he deigned to take off his hat, which was very much of the ſize and cock of Piſtol's.

Having laid aſide his great coat, I could not help admiring the extraordinary make of this man of war: He was about five feet and three inches high, ſixteen inches of which went to his face and long ſcraggy neck; his thighs were about ſix inches in length, his legs, reſembling ſpindles or drum-ſticks, two feet and a half, and his body, which put me in mind of extenſion without ſubſtance, engroſſed the remainder;——ſo that on the whole, he appeared like a ſpider or graſs-hopper erect—and was almoſt a *vox, et preterea nihil.*—His dreſs conſiſted of a frock, of what is called bear-ſkin, the ſkirts of which were about half a foot long; an huſſar waiſtcoat, reaching half way down his thighs; ſcarlet breeches; worſted ſtockings, rolled up almoſt to his groin; and ſhoes with wooden heels, at leaſt two inches high; he carried a ſword very near as long as himſelf in one hand, and with the other conducted his lady, who ſeemed to be a woman of his own age, and ſtill retained ſome remains of an agreeable perſon; but ſo ridiculouſly affected, that, had I not been a novice in the world, I might have eaſily perceived in her the deplorable vanity, and ſecond-hand airs of a lady's woman. We were all aſſembled in the kitchen, when Captain Weazel (for that was his name) deſired a room with a fire for himſelf and ſpouſe, and told the landlord, they would ſup by themſelves. The inn keeper replied, that he could not afford them a room by themſelves; and as for ſupping, he had prepared victuals for the paſſengers in the waggon, without reſpect of perſons; but if he could prevail on the reſt to let him have his choice in a ſeparate manner, he ſhould be very well pleaſed. This was no ſooner ſaid, than all of us declared againſt the propoſal, and Miſs Jenny (our other female paſſenger) obſerved, that if Captain Weazel and his lady

had

had a mind to ſup by themſelves, they might wait until we ſhould have done.——At this hint the Captain put on a martial frown, and looked very big, without ſpeaking; while his yoke-fellow, with a diſdainful toſs of her noſe, muttered ſomething about creature; —— which Miſs Jenny over-hearing, ſtept up to her, ſaying, "None of your names, good Mrs. Abigail:—creature quotha—I'll aſſure you—No ſuch creature as you neither—no ten pound ſneaker—no quality coupler."—Here the Captain interpoſed, with a "Damme, Madam, what do you mean by that?"—"Damn you, Sir; who are you? (replied Miſs Jenny) Who made you a Captain, you pitiful, trencher-ſcraping, pimping curler! 'Sdeath! the army is come to a fine paſs, when ſuch fellows as you get commiſſions—What, I ſuppoſe you think I don't know you!—Egad you and your helpmate are well met—a caſt-off miſtreſs, and a bald *valet de chambre* are well yoked together."—"Blood and wounds (cried Weazel) d'ye queſtion the honour of my wife, Madam!——Hell and damnation! No man in England durſt ſay ſo much! I would flea him, carbonado him!—Fury and deſtruction I would have his liver for my ſupper." — So ſaying, he drew his ſword, and flouriſhed with it, to the great terror of Strap; while Miſs Jenny, ſnapping her fingers, told him, ſhe did not value his reſentment a louſe.—In the midſt of this quarrel the maſter of the waggon alighted, who, underſtanding the cauſe of the diſturbance, and fearing the Captain and his lady would take umbrage, and leave his carriage, was at great pains to have every thing made up, which he at laſt accompliſhed, and we ſat down to ſupper all together.—About bed-time, we were ſhewn to our apartments: The old Uſurer, Strap, and I, to one room; the Captain, his wife, and Miſs Jenny to another.—About midnight, my companion's bowels being diſordered, he got up in order to go backward; but, in his return, miſtaking one door for another, entered Weazel's chamber, and without any heſitation went to bed to his wife, who was faſt aſleep; the

Captain

Captain being at another end of the room, groping for ſome empty veſſel, in lieu of his own chamber-pot, which was leaky: As he did not perceive Strap coming in, he went towards his own bed, after having found a convenience; but no ſooner did he feel a rough head covered with a cotton night-cap, than it came into his mind, that he had miſtaken Miſs Jenny's bed inſtead of his own, and that the head he felt was that of ſome gallant, with whom ſhe had made an aſſignation. Full of this conjecture, and ſcandalized at the proſtitution of his apartment, he ſnatched up the veſſel he had juſt before filled, and emptied it at once on the aſtoniſhed barber, and his own wife: who, awaking at that inſtant, broke forth into lamentable cries, which not only alarmed the huſband beyond meaſure, but frightened poor Strap almoſt out of his ſenſes; for he verily believed himſelf bewitched; eſpecially when the incenſed Captain ſeized him by the throat, with a volley of oaths, aſking him how he durſt have the preſumption to attempt the chaſtity of his wife.—Poor Strap was ſo amazed and confounded, that he could ſay nothing, but,—"I take God to witneſs ſhe's a virgin for me."—Mrs. Weazel, enraged to find herſelf in ſuch a pickle, through the precipitation of her huſband, aroſe in her ſhift, and with the heel of her ſhoe, which ſhe found by the bed-ſide, belaboured the Captain's bald pate, till he roared, "Murder."—"I'll teach you to empty your ſtink-pot on me, cried ſhe, you pitiful hop o'my thumb coxcomb, What! I warrant you are jealous, you man of lath. Was it for this I condeſcended to take you to my bed, you poor withered ſapleſs twig?"——The noiſe, occaſioned by this adventure, had brought the maſter of the waggon, and me to the door, where we overheard all that paſſed with great ſatisfaction. In the mean time we were alarmed with the cry of "Rape! Murder! Rape!" which Miſs Jenny pronounced with great vociferation.—"O! you vile, abominable old villain, ſaid ſhe, would you rob me of my virtue—But I'll be revenged of you, you old goat! I will!——Help! for

heaven's

heaven's ſake! help!—I ſhall be raviſhed! ruined! help!——Some ſervants of the inn, hearing this cry, came running up ſtairs with lights, and ſuch weapons as chance afforded; when we beheld a very diverting ſcene—In one corner ſtood the poor captain ſhivering in his ſhirt, which was all torn to rags; with a woeful viſage ſcratched all over, with his wife; who had by this time wrapped the counterpane about her, and ſat ſobbing on the ſide of her bed.—In the other end lay the old uſurer ſprawling on Miſs Jenny's bed. with his flannel jacket over his ſhirt, and his tawny meagre limbs expoſed to the air; while ſhe held him faſt by his two ears, and loaded him with execrations.—When we aſked what was the matter, ſhe affected to weep, told us that ſhe was afraid that wicked rogue had ruined her in her ſleep, and bade us take notice of what we ſaw, for ſhe intended to make uſe of our evidence againſt him. The poor wretch looked like one more dead than alive, and begged to be releaſed, a favour which he had no ſooner obtained, than he proteſted ſhe was no woman, but a devil incarnate—that ſhe had firſt ſeduced his fleſh to rebel and then betrayed him.—Yes, cockatrice (continued he) you know you laid this ſnare for me—but you ſhan't ſucceed—for I will hang myſelf before you get a farthing of me."—So ſaying, he crawled to his bed, groaning all the way.——We then advanced to the Captain, who told us, "Gentlemen, here has been a damn'd miſtake; but I'll be revenged on him who was the occaſion of it.—That Scotchman who carries the knapſack ſhall not breathe this vital air another day, if my name be Weazel.——My dear, I aſk you ten thouſand pardons; you are ſenſible I could mean no harm to you."—"I know not what you meant (replied ſhe, ſighing,) but I know I have got enough to ſend me to my grave." —At length they were reconciled. The wife was complimented with a ſhare of Miſs Jenny's bed (her own being overflowed) and the maſter of the waggon invited Weazel to ſleep the remaining part of the night with him. I retired to mine, where I found Strap mortally

tally afraid, having ſtole away in the dark, while the Captain and his lady were at logger-heads.

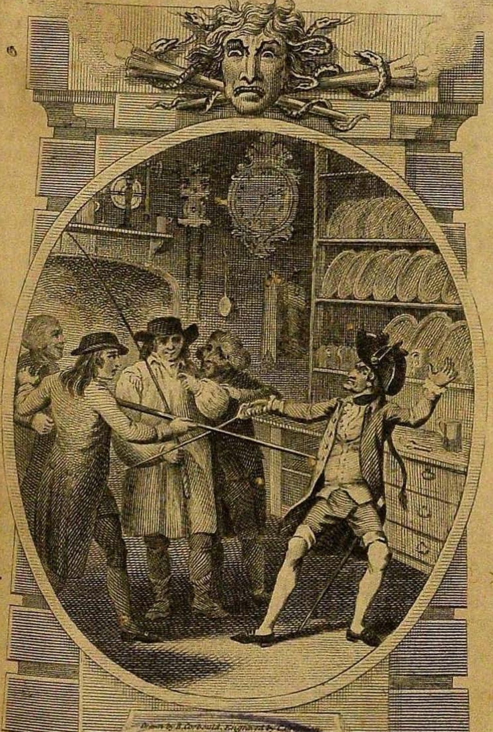
CHAP. XII.

Captain Weazel challenges Strap, who declines the Combat—An affair between the Captain and me—The Uſurer is fain to give Miſs Jenny five Guineas for a Releaſe—We are in danger of loſing a Meal—The Behaviour of Weazel, Jenny, and Joey, on that occaſion—An Account of Captain Weazel and his Lady—The Captain's Courage tried—Iſaac's Mirth at the Captain's expence.

NEXT morning I agreed to give the maſter of the waggon ten ſhillings for my paſſage to London, provided Strap ſhould be allowed to take my place when I ſhould be diſpoſed to walk.—At the ſame time I deſired him to appeaſe the incenſed Captain, who had entered the kitchen with a drawn ſword in his hand, and threatened, with many oaths, to ſacrifice the villain, who attempted to violate his bed; but it was to no purpoſe for the maſter to explain the miſtake, and aſſure him of the poor lad's innocence, who ſtood trembling behind me all the while: the more ſubmiſſion there appeared in Strap, the more implacable ſeemed the reſentment of Weazel, who ſwore he muſt fight him, or he would inſtantly put him to death. I was extremely provoked at this inſolence, and told him it could not be ſuppoſed that a poor barber lad would engage a man of the ſword at his own weapon; but I was perſuaded he would wreſtle or box with him. To which propoſal Strap immediately gave aſſent, by ſaying he would box with him for a guinea.—Weazel replied, with a look of diſdain, that it was beneath any gentleman of his character to fight like a porter, or even to put himſelf on a footing, in any reſpect, with ſuch a fellow as Strap. "Odds boddikins! (cries Joey) ſure, Coptain, you would not commit mooder! Here's a poor lad that is willing to make atonement for his offence; and an than

woan't

woan't fatifie yaw, offers to fight yau fairly.—And yaw woan't box, I dare fay, he will coodgel with yaw.—Woan't yaw my lad ?"—Strap, after fome hefitation, anfwered, "Ye,—yes, I'll cudgel with him." But this expedient being alfo rejected by the captain, I began to fmell his character, and, tipping Strap the wink, told the company that I had always heard it faid, the perfon who receives a challenge fhould have the choice of the weapons; this, therefore, being the rule in point of honour, I would venture to promife on the head of my companion, that he would even fight captain Weazel at fharps; but it fhould be with fuch fharps as Strap was beft acquainted with, namely, razors.—At my mentioning razors, I could perceive the captain's colour change, while Strap, pulling me by the fleeve, wifpered with great eagernefs; "No, no; not for the love of God, don't make any fuch bargain." At length, Weazel, recovering himfelf, turned towards me, and with a furious countenance, afked, "Who the devil are you?—Will you fight me?" With thefe words, putting himfelf in a pofture, I was grievoufly alarmed at feeing the point of a fword within half a foot of my breaft; and, fpringing to one fide, fnatched up a fpit which ftood in the chimney corner, with which I kept my formidable adverfary at bay; who made a great many half lunges, fkipping backward at every pufh, till at laft I pinned him up in a corner, to the no fmall diverfion of the company. While he was in this fituation his wife entered; and, feeing her hufband in thefe dangerous circumftances, uttered a dreadful fcream: In this emergency Weazel demanded a ceffation, which was immediately granted; and at laft was contented with the fubmiffion of Strap, who, falling on his knees before him, protefted the innocence of his intention, and afked pardon for the miftake he had committed. This affair being ended without bloodfhed, we went to breakfaft, but miffed two of our company, namely, Mifs Jenny and the ufurer. As for the firft, Mrs. Weazel informed us, that fhe had kept her awake all night



Drawn by R. Corbould. Engraved by [illegible]

RODERICK RANDOM.

Roderick Random encountering Captain Weazel, in defence of his companion Strap.

Vide Vol. I. Chap. [illegible] Page 72.

Printed for [illegible] 1798.

THE TANJORE MAHARAJA SERFOGI'S SARASWATI MAHAL.

night with her groans, and that when ſhe roſe in the morning, Miſs Jenny was ſo much indiſpoſed, that ſhe could not proceed on her journey. At that inſtant a meſſage came from her to the maſter of the waggon, who immediately went into her chamber, followed by us all. She told him, in a lamentable tone, that ſhe was afraid of a miſcarriage, owing to the fright ſhe received laſt night, from the brutality of Iſaac; and, as the event was uncertain, deſired the uſurer might be detained to anſwer for the conſequence. Accordingly this ancient Tarquin was found in the waggon, whither he had retired to avoid the ſhame of laſt night's diſgrace, and brought by force into her preſence. He no ſooner appeared, than ſhe began to weep and to ſigh moſt piteouſly, and told us, if ſhe died, ſhe ſhould leave her blood upon the head of that raviſher. Poor Iſaac turned up his eyes and hands to heaven, prayed that God would deliver him from the machinations of that Jezabel; and aſſured us, with tears in his eyes, that his being found in bed with her was the reſult of her own invitation. The waggoner, underſtanding the caſe, adviſed Iſaac to make it up, by giving her a ſum of money: to which advice he replied with great vehemence, "A ſum of money!—a halter for the cockatrice!"—"O! 'tis very well, (ſaid Miſs Jenny): I ſee it is in vain to attempt that flinty heart of his by fair means.—Joey, be ſo good as to go to the Juſtice, and tell him there is a ſick perſon here, who wants to ſee him on an affair of conſequence."—At the name of the Juſtice, Iſaac trembled, and, bidding Joey ſtay, aſked, with a quavering voice, what ſhe would have? She told him, that, as he had not perpetrated his wicked purpoſe, ſhe would be ſatisfied with a ſmall matter.—And though the damage ſhe might ſuſtain in her health might be irreparable, ſhe would give him a releaſe for an hundred guineas."—"An hundred guineas? (cried he in an ecſtaſy) an hundred furies!—Where ſhould a poor old wretch like me have an hundred guineas! If I had ſo much money do you think I ſhould be found travelling in a waggon, at this ſeaſon of the year?"—"Come,

come, (replied Jenny) none of your miferly artifi[illegible] here.—You think I don't know Ifaac Rapine, the mo ney broker in the Minories.—Ah! you old rogue many a pawn have you had of me and my acquaintance which was never redeemed."—Ifaac finding it was i[n] vain to difguife himfelf, offered twenty fhillings for [a] difcharge, which fhe abfolutely refufed under fifty pounds: At laft, however, fhe was brought down to five, which he paid, with great reluctancy, rather than be profecuted for a rape. After which accommodation the fick perfon made fhift to get into the waggon, and we fet forwards in great tranquillity, Strap being accommodated with Joey's horfe, the driver himfelf choofing to walk.—This morning and forenoon we were entertained with an account of the valour of captain Weazel, who told us he had once knocked down a foldier that made game of him; tweaked a drawer by the nofe, who found fault with his picking his teeth with a fork, a[t] another time; and that he had, moreover, challenged a cheefemonger, who had the prefumption to be his rival for the truth of which exploits he appealed to his wife.— She confirmed whatever he faid; and obferved, "th[e] laft affair happened that very day on which I received [a] love letter from 'Squire Gobble: and don't you re member, my dear, I was prodigioufly fick that ver[y] night with eating ortolans, when my lord Diddle too[k] notice of my complexion being altered, and my lad[y] was fo alarmed, that fhe had well nigh fainted."— "Yes, my dear, (replied the captain) you know m[y] lord faid to me with a fneer,—"Billy, Mrs. Weaze[l] is certainly breeding."—And I anfwered cavalierly "my Lord, I wifh I could return the compliment."— Upon which the whole company broke out into an im moderate fit of laughter; and my lord, who loves a re partee dearly, came round and buffed me."—We tra velled in this manner five days without interruption or meeting any thing worth notice: Mifs Jenny (w[ho] foon recovered her fpirits) entertaining us every d[ay] with diverting fongs, of which fhe could fing a gre[at] number;

...ber; and rallying her old gallant, who, notwithstanding, would never be reconciled to her.—On the sixth day, while we were about to sit down to dinner, the innkeeper came and told us, that three gentlemen, just arrived, had ordered the victuals to be carried to their apartment, although he had informed them that they were bespoke by the passengers in the waggon. To which information they had replied, "The passengers in the waggon might be damn'd,—their betters must be served before them—they supposed it would be no hardship on such travellers to dine upon bread and cheese for one day."—This was a terrible disappointment to us all; and we laid our heads together how to remedy it; when Miss Jenny observed that captain Weazel, being by profession a soldier, ought in this case to protect and prevent us from being insulted. But the captain excused himself, saying, he would not for allthe world be known to have travelled inawaggon: swearing at the same time, that could he appear with honour, theyshould eat his sword sooner than his provision.—Upon this declaration, Miss Jenny, snatching his weapon, drew it, and ran immediately into the kitchen, where she threatened to put the cook to death if he did not send the victuals into our chamber immediately.—The noise she made brought the three strangers down, one of whom no sooner perceived her, than he cried, Ha! Jenny Ramper! what the devil brought thee hither?—"My dear Jack Rattle! (replied she) running into his arms, is it you?—Then Weazel may go to hell for a dinner—I shall dine with you." They consented to this proposal with a great deal of joy; and we were on the point of being reduced to a very uncomfortable meal, when Joey, understanding the whole affair, entered the kitchen with a pitchfork in his hand, and swore he would be the death of any man who should pretend to seize the victuals prepared for the waggon. This menace had liked to have produced fatal consequences; the three strangers drawing their swords, and being joined by their servants, and we ranging ourselves on the side of

Joey; when the landlord interpoſing, offered to part with his own dinner to keep the peace, which was accepted by the ſtrangers; and we ſat down at table, without any further moleſtation. In the afternoon, I choſe to walk along with Joey, and Strap took my place. Having entered into a converſation with this driver, I ſoon found him to be a merry, facetious, good-natured fellow, and withal very arch: He informed me, that Miſs Jenny was a common girl upon the town, who falling into company with a recruiting officer, he carried her down in the ſtage-coach from London to Newcaſtle, where he had been arreſted for debt, and was now in priſon: upon which ſhe was fain to return to her former way of life by this conveyance. He told me likewiſe, that one of the gentlemen's ſervants, whom we left at the inn, having accidentally ſeen Weazel, immediately knew him, and acquainted Joey with ſome particulars of his character. That he had ſerved my lord Frizzle in quality of a *valet de Chambre* many years; while he lived ſeparate from his lady; but upon their reconciliation, ſhe expreſsly inſiſted upon Weazel's being turned off, as well as the woman he kept: when his lordſhip, to get rid of them both with a good grace, propoſed that he ſhould marry his miſtreſs, and he would procure a commiſſion for him in the army: This expedient was agreed to, and Weazel is now, by his lordſhip's intereſt, enſign in——'s regiment. I found he and I had the ſame ſentiments with regard to Weazel's courage, which we reſolved to put to the trial, by alarming the paſſengers with the cry of "an highwayman!" as ſoon as an horſeman ſhould appear. This ſcheme we put in practice towards the duſk, when we deſcried a man on horſeback approaching us. Joey had no ſooner intimated to the people in the waggon, that he was afraid he ſhould be robbed, than a general conſternation aroſe: Strap jumped out of the waggon, and hid himſelf behind an hedge. The uſurer put forth ejaculations, and made a ruſtling among the ſtraw, which made us conjecture he had hid ſomething under it,

it. Mrs. Weazel, wringing her hands, uttered lamentable cries; and the captain, to our great amazement, began to ſnore; but this artifice did not ſucceed; for Miſs Jenny, ſhaking him by the ſhoulder, bawl'd out, "'Sdeath Captain! is this a time to ſnore, when we are going to be robbed?—Get up for ſhame, and behave like a ſoldier and a man of honor."—Weazel pretended to be in a great paſſion for being diſturbed, and ſwore he would have his nap out if all the highwaymen in England ſurrounded him.—D—n my blood! what are you afraid of?" continued he, at the ſame time trembling with ſuch agitation, that the whole carriage ſhook. This ſingular piece of behaviour incenſed Miſs Ramper ſo much, that ſhe cried, "D—n your pitiful ſoul, you are as arrant a poltroon as ever was drummed out of a regiment.—Stop the waggon, Joey, let me go out, and by G—d, if I have rhetoric enough, the thief ſhall not only take your purſe, but your ſkin alſo."—So ſaying, ſhe leaped out with great agility. By this time the horſeman came up with us, and happened to be a gentleman's ſervant well known to Joey, who communicated the ſcheme, and deſired him to carry it on a little further, by going up to the waggon, and queſtioning thoſe within. The ſtranger conſenting for the ſake of diverſion, approached it, and in a terrible tone demanded, "who have we got here?"—Iſaac replied, with a lamentable voice, "here's a poor miſerable ſinner, who has got a ſmall family to maintain, and nothing in the world wherewithal, but theſe fifteen ſhillings, which if you rob me of, we muſt all ſtarve together." "Who's that ſobbing in the other corner?"—ſaid the ſuppoſed highwayman. "A poor unfortunate woman, (anſwered Mrs. Weazel) upon whom I beg you, for Chriſt's ſake, to have compaſſion."—"Are you maid or wife?" ſaid he, "Wife, to my ſorrow," cried ſhe—"Who, or where is your huſband?" continued he—"My huſband, (replied Mrs. Weazel) is an officer in the army, and was left ſick at the laſt inn where we dined."—"You muſt be miſtaken, Madam, (ſaid he)

for I myfelf faw him get into the waggon this afternoon.—But pray what fmell is that? Sure your lap-dog has befouled himfelf; let me catch hold of the nafty cur, I'll teach him better manners."—Here he laid hold of one of Weazel's legs, and pulled him out from under his wife's petticoats, where he had concealed himfelf. The poor trembling captain being detected in his inglorious fituation, rubbed his eyes, and affecting to wake out of fleep, cried, "What's the matter?—What's the matter?"—"The matter is not much, (anfwered the horfeman) I only called in to enquire after your health, and fo adieu, moft noble captain."—So faying, he clapped fpurs to his horfe, and was out of fight in a moment. It was fome time before Weazel could recollect himfelf; but at length re-affuming the big look, he faid, "Damn the fellow! why did he ride away, before I had time to afk him how his lord and lady did?—Don't you remember Tom, my dear?" addreffing himfelf to his wife.—"Yes, (replied fhe) I think I do remember fomething of the fellow,—but you know I feldom converfe with people of his ftation."—"Hey dey! (cried Joey) do yau knaw the young mon, coptain?"—"Know him, (faid Weazel) many a time has he filled a glafs of Burgundy for me at my lord Trippet's table,"—"And what may his neame be, coptain?" faid Joey—"His name!—his name, (replied Weazel) is Tom Rinfer."—"Waunds (cried Joey) a has changed his own neame then! for I'fe lay any wager he was chriftened John Trotter."—This obfervation raifed a laugh againft the captain, who feemed very much difconcerted; when Ifaac broke filence, and faid, "It was no matter who or what he was, fince he has not proved the robber we fufpected; and we ought to blefs God for our narrow efcape."—"Blefs God, (faid Weazel) blefs the devil! for what? had he been a highwayman, I fhould have eat his blood, body, and guts, before he had robbed me, or any one in this *diligence*." "Ha, ha, ha, (cried Mifs Jenny) I believe you will eat all you kill, indeed, captain." The ufurer
was

was ſo well pleaſed at the event of this adventure, that he could not refrain from being ſevere, and took notice that captain Weazel ſeemed to be a good Chriſtian, for he had armed himſelf with patience and reſignation, inſtead of carnal weapons: and worked out his ſalvation with fear and trembling. This piece of ſatire occaſioned a great deal of mirth at Weazel's expence, who muttered many oaths, and threatened to cut Iſaac's throat. The uſurer taking hold of this menace, ſaid, "Gentlemen and ladies, I take you all to witneſs, that my life is in danger from this bloody minded officer.—I'll have him bound over to the peace." This ſecond ſneer procured another laugh againſt him, and he continued creſt-fallen during the remainder part of our journey.

CHAP. XIII.

Strap and I are terrified by an Apparition—Strap's Conjecture—The Myſtery explained by Joey—We arrive at London—Our Dreſs and Appearance deſcribed—We are inſulted in the Street—An Adventure in an Ale-houſe—We are impoſed upon by a waggiſh Footman—Set to rights by a Tobacconiſt—Take Lodgings—Dive for a Dinner—An Accident at our Ordinary.

WE arrived at our inn, ſupped, and went to bed; but Strap's diſtemper continuing, he was obliged to riſe in the middle of the night, and taking the candle in his hand, which he had left burning for the purpoſe, he went down to the houſe of office, whence in a ſhort time he returned in a great hurry, with his hair ſtanding on end, and a look betokening horror and aſtoniſhment. Without ſpeaking a word, he ſet down the light, and jumped into bed behind me, where he lay and trembled with great violence. When I aſked him what was the matter? he replied with a broken accent, "God have mercy on us! I have ſeen the Devil." Though my prejudice was not quite ſo ſtrong as his, I was not a

little alarmed at this exclamation; and much more ſo, when I heard the ſound of bells approaching our chamber, and felt my bed-fellow cling cloſe to me, uttering theſe words, "Chriſt have mercy upon us! there he comes."—At that inſtant a monſtrous overgrown raven entered our chamber, with bells at his feet, and made directly towards our bed.—As this creature is reckoned in our country a common vehicle for the devil and witches to play their pranks in, I verily believed we were haunted; and in a violent fright, ſhrunk under the bed clothes. This terrible apparition leapt upon the bed, and after giving us ſeveral ſevere dabs with his beak through the blankets, hopped away, and vaniſhed. Strap and I recommended ourſelves to the protection of Heaven with great devotion, and when we no longer heard the noiſe, ventured to peep up and take breath. But we had not long been freed from this phantom, when another appeared that had well nigh deprived us both of our ſenſes. We perceived an old man enter the room, with a long white beard that reached to his middle: there was a certain wild peculiarity in his eyes and countenance, that did not ſavour of this world; and his dreſs conſiſted of a brown ſtuff coat buttoned behind and at the wriſts, with an old faſhioned cap of the ſame ſtuff upon his head.—I was ſo amazed that I had not power to move my eyes from ſuch a ghaſtly object, but lay motionleſs, and ſaw him come ſtrait up to me: when he reached the bed he wrung his hands, and cried, with a voice that did not ſeem to belong to a human creature, "Where's Ralph?"—I made no reply; upon which he repeated in an accent ſtill more preternatural, "Where's Ralpho?"—He had no ſooner pronounced theſe words, than I heard the ſound of the bells at a diſtance; which the apparition having liſtened to, tript away, and left me almoſt petrified with fear. It was a good while before I could recover myſelf ſo far as to ſpeak; and when at length I turned to Strap, I found him in a fit, which, however did not laſt long, —When he came to himſelf, I aſked his opinion of what

Vide Volume I. Chap. 13. Page 80.

The terror of Random and Strap, at the entrance of the old man into their chamber, supposing him an apparition.

Engraved for C. Cooke. Oct. 20. 1797.

RODERIC RANDOM.

Drawn by R. Corbould Engraved by J. Saunders.

what had happened; and he assured me that the first must certainly be the soul of some person damned, which appeared by the chains about his legs (for his fears had magnified the creature to the bigness of a horse, and the sound of small maurice bells to the clanking of massy chains.)——As for the old man, he took it to be the spirit of somebody murdered long ago in this place, which had power granted it to torment the assassin in the shape of a raven, and that Ralpho was the name of the said murderer.—Although I had no great faith in this interpretation, I was too much troubled to enjoy any sleep; and in all my future adventures never passed a night so ill.—In the morning, Strap imparted the whole affair to Joey, who, after an immoderate fit of laughter, explained the matter, by telling him the old man was the landlord's father, who had been an idiot some years, and diverted himself with a tame raven, which, it seems, had hopped away from his apartment in the night, and induced him to follow it to our chamber, where he enquired after it under the name of Ralpho.

Nothing remarkable happened during the remaining part of our journey, which continued six or seven days longer: At length, we entered the great city, and lodged all night at the inn where the waggon put up. Next morning all the passengers parted different ways; while my companion and I sallied out to enquire for the Member of Parliament, to whom I had a letter of recommendation from Mr. Crab. As we had discharged our lodging at the inn, Strap took up our baggage, and marched behind me in the street with the knapsack at his back, as usual, so that we made a very whimsical appearance.—I had dressed myself to the greatest advantage; that is, put on a clean ruffled shirt, and my best thread stockings; my hair, (which was of the deepest red) hung down upon my shoulders as lank and as strait as a pound of candles; and the skirts of my coat reached to the middle of my leg; my waistcoat and breeches were of the same piece, and cut in the same taste: and my hat very much resembled a barber's ba-

son

ſon, in the ſhallowneſs of the crown, and narrowneſs of the brim. Strap was habited in a much leſs awkward manner: but a ſhort crop-eared wig that very much reſembled Scrub's in the play, and a knapſack on his back, added to what is called a queer fiz, occaſioned by a long chin, and hook noſe, and high cheek bones, rendered him on the whole a very fit ſubject of mirth and pleaſantry. As we walked along, Strap, at my deſire, inquired of a carman, whom he met, whereabouts Mr. Cringer lived;—and was anſwered by a ſtare, accompanied with the word, "Anan!" Upon which I came up, in order to explain the queſtion, but had the misfortune to be unintelligible likewiſe, the carman damning us for a louſy Scotch guard, and whipping his horſes with a "Gee ho?" which nettled me to the quick, and rouſed the indignation of Strap ſo far, that after the fellow was gone a good way, he told me he would fight him for a farthing.—While we were deliberating upon what was to be done, an hackney coachman driving ſoftly along, and perceiving us ſtanding by the kennel, came up cloſe to us, and calling, "A coach, maſter!" by a dexterous management of the reins, made his horſes ſtumble in the wet, and bedaub us all over with mud.—After which exploit he drove on, applauding himſelf with a hearty laugh, in which ſeveral people joined, to my great mortification; but one more compaſſionate than the reſt, ſeeing us ſtrangers, adviſed me to go into an ale-houſe and dry myſelf. I thanked him for his advice, which I immediately complied with; and going into the houſe he pointed out, called for a pot of beer, and ſat down by a fire in the public room, where we cleaned ourſelves as well as we could.—In the mean time, a wag, who ſat in a box ſmoaking his pipe, underſtanding by our dialect, that we were from Scotland, came up to me, and with a grave countenance, aſked how long I had been caught? As I did not know the meaning of this queſtion, I made no anſwer; and he went on, ſaying, it could not be a great while, for my tail was not yet cut; at the ſame time taking hold of my hair, and

tipping

tipping the wink to the reſt of the company, which ſeemed highly entertained with his wit.—I was incenſed at this uſage, but afraid of reſenting it, becauſe I happened to be in a ſtrange place, and perceived the perſon who ſpoke to me was a brawny fellow, for whom I thought myſelf by no means a match. However, Strap, having either more courage or leſs caution, could not put up with the inſults that I ſuffered; but told him, in a peremptory tone, "He was an uncivil fellow for making ſo free with his betters."—Then the wit going towards him, aſked What he had got in his knapſack? "Is it oatmeal or brimſtone, Sawny?" ſaid he, ſeizing him by the chin, which he ſhook, to the inexpreſſible diverſion of all preſent.—My companion feeling himſelf aſſaulted in ſuch an opprobrious manner, diſengaged himſelf in a trice, and lent his antagoniſt ſuch a box on the ear, as made him ſtagger to the other ſide of the room; and, in a moment, a ring was formed for the combatants.—Seeing Strap beginning to ſtrip, and my blood being heated with indignation, which baniſhed all other thoughts, I undreſſed myſelf to the ſkin in an inſtant, and declared, that as the affront that occaſioned the quarrel was offered to me, I would fight it out myſelf: upon which one or two cried out, "That's a brave Scotch boy, you ſhall have fair-play, by G—d." This aſſurance gave me freſh ſpirits; and going up to my adverſary, who by his pale countenance did not ſeem much inclined to the battle, I ſtruck him ſo hard on the ſtomach, that he reeled over a bench, and fell to the ground. Then I attempted to keep him down, in order to improve my ſucceſs, according to the manner of my own country; but was reſtrained by the ſpectators, one of whom endeavoured to raiſe up my opponent, but in vain, for he proteſted he would not fight, as he was not quite recovered of a late illneſs.—I was very well pleaſed at this excuſe, and immediately dreſſed myſelf, having acquired the good opinion of the company for my bravery, as well as of my comrade Strap, who ſhook me by the hand, and wiſhed me joy of the victory.

And having drank our pot, and dried our cloaths, we enquired of the landlord if he knew Mr. Cringer, the Member of Parliament, and were amazed at his replying in the negative; for we imagined he muſt be altogether as conſpicuous here as in the borough he repreſented; but he told us we might poſſibly hear of him as we paſſed along.—We betook ourſelves, therefore, to the ſtreet; where ſeeing a footman ſtanding at a door, we made up to him, and aſked if he knew where our patron lived?—This member of the party-coloured fraternity, ſurveying us both very minutely, ſaid he knew Mr. Cringer very well, and bade us turn down the firſt ſtreet on our left, then turn to the right, and then to the left again, after which perambulation we ſhould obſerve a lane, through which we muſt paſs, and at the other end we ſhould find an alley that led to another ſtreet, where we ſhould ſee the ſign of the Thiſtle and Three Pedlars, and there he lodged.—We thanked him for his information, and went forwards, Strap telling me, that he thought this perſon to be an honeſt, friendly man, by his countenance, before he opened his mouth; in which opinion I acquieſced, aſcribing his good manners to the company he daily ſaw in the houſe where he ſerved. We followed his directions punctually, in turning to the left and to the right, and to the left again: but inſtead of ſeeing a lane before us, found ourſelves at the ſide of the river, a circumſtance that perplexed us not a little; and my fellow-traveller ventured to pronounce, that we had certainly miſſed our way.—By this time we were pretty much fatigued with our walk; and not knowing how to proceed, I went into a ſmall ſnuff-ſhop hard by, encouraged by the ſign of the Highlander, where I found, to my inexpreſſible ſatisfaction, the ſhop-keeper was my countryman.—He was no ſooner informed of our peregrination, and the directions we had received from the footman, than he informed us we had been impoſed upon, telling us Mr. Cringer lived at the other end of the town: and that it would be to no purpoſe for us to go thither to-day, for by that time he was gone

to

to the Houſe.—I then aſked if he could recommend us to a lodging. He readily gave us a line to one of his acquaintance, who kept a chandler's ſhop not far from St. Martin's Lane; there we hired a bed-room, up two pair of ſtairs, at the rate of 2s. *per* week, ſo very ſmall, that when the bed was let down, we were obliged to carry out every other piece of furniture that belonged to the apartment, and uſe the bedſtead inſtead of chairs. About dinner-time our landlord aſked us how we propoſed to live? to which interrogation we anſwered, that we would be directed by him. "Well then, (ſays he) there are two ways of eating in this town, for people of your condition: the one more creditable and expenſive than the other; the firſt, is to dine at an eating-houſe, frequented by well dreſſed people only; and the other, is called diving, practiſed by thoſe who are either obliged or inclined to live frugally."—I gave him to underſtand, that provided the laſt was not infamous, it would ſuit much better with our circumſtances than the other. Infamous! (cried he) God forbid! there are many creditable people, rich people, aye, and fine people, that dive every day. I have ſeen many a pretty gentleman, with a laced waiſtcoat, dine in that manner very comfortably for three pence halfpenny, and go afterwards to the coffee-houſe, where he made a figure with the beſt lord in the land—but your own eyes ſhall bear witneſs—I will go along with you to-day, and introduce you."—He accordingly conducted us to a certain lane, where ſtopping, he bade us obſerve him, and do as he did, and walking a few paces, dived into a cellar, and diſappeared in an inſtant.——I followed his example, and deſcending very ſucceſsfully, found myſelf in the middle of a cook's ſhop, almoſt ſuffocated with the ſteam of boiled beef, and ſurrounded by a company of hackney coachmen, chairmen, draymen, and a few footmen out of place, or on board wages; who ſat eating ſhin of beef, tripe, cow-heel, or ſauſages, at ſeparate boards, covered with cloths which turned my ſtomach —While I ſtood in amaze, undetermined whether to ſit

down or walk upwards again, Strap, in his deſcent, miſſing one of his ſteps, tumbled headlong into this infernal ordinary, and overturned the cook as ſhe carried a porringer of ſoup to one of the gueſts: In her fall, ſhe daſhed the whole meſs againſt the legs of a drummer belonging to the foot-guards, who happened to be in her way, and ſcalded him ſo miſerably, that he ſtarted up, and danced up and down, uttering a volly of execrations that made my hair ſtand on end. While he entertained the company in this manner, with an eloquence peculiar to himſelf, the cook got up, and after a hearty curſe on the poor author of this miſchance, who lay under the table ſcratching his rump, with a woeful countenance, emptied a ſalt-ſeller in her hand, ſtripping down the patient's ſtocking, which brought the ſkin along with it, applied the contents to the ſore.—This poultice was ſcarce laid on, when the drummer, who had begun to abate his exclamation, broke forth into ſuch a hideous yell, as made the whole company tremble; then ſeizing a pewter pint pot that ſtood by him, ſqueezed the ſides of it together, as if it had been made of pliant leather, grinding his teeth at the ſame time with a moſt horrible grin. Gueſſing the cauſe of this violent tranſport, I bade the woman waſh off the ſalt, and bathe the part with oil, which ſhe did, and procured immediate eaſe. But here another difficulty occurred, which was no other than the landlady's inſiſting on his paying for the pot he had rendered uſeleſs. He ſwore he would pay for nothing but what he had eaten, and bade her be thankful for his moderation, or elſe he would proſecute her for damages.—Strap, foreſeeing the whole affair would lie at his door, promiſed to ſatisfy the cook, and called for a dram of gin to treat the drummer, which entirely appeaſed him, and compoſed all animoſities. After this accommodation, our landlord and we ſat down at a board, and dined upon ſhin of beef moſt deliciouſly; our reckoning amounting to two-pence halfpenny each, bread and ſmall beer included.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

We viſit Strap's Friend—A Deſcription of him—His Advice—We go to Mr. Cringer's Houſe—Are denied Admittance—An Accident befals Strap—His Behaviour thereupon—An extraordinary Adventure occurs, in the Courſe of which I loſe my Money.

IN the afternoon my companion propoſed to call at his friend's houſe, which, we were informed, was in the neighbourhood, whither we accordingly went, and were ſo lucky as to find him at home. This gentleman, who had come from Scotland three or four years before, kept a ſchool in town, where he taught the Latin, French, and Italian languages; but what he chiefly profeſſed, was the pronunciation of the Engliſh tongue, after a method more ſpeedy and uncommon than any practiſed heretofore; and, indeed, if his ſcholars ſpoke like their maſter, the latter part of his undertaking was certainly performed to a tittle; for although I could eaſily underſtand every word of what I had heard hitherto ſince I entered England, three parts in four of his dialect were as unintelligible to me, as if he had ſpoke in Arabic or Iriſh.—He was a middle ſized man, and ſtooped very much, though not above the age of forty; his face was frightfully pitted with the ſmall-pox, and his mouth extended from ear to ear.—He was dreſſed in a night-gown of plaid, faſtened about his middle with a ſerjeant's old ſaſh, and a tie periwig with a fore-top three inches high, in the faſhion of king Charles the Second's reign.—After he had received Strap (who was related to him) very courteouſly, he inquired of him, who I was: and being informed, took me by the hand, telling me, he was at ſchool with my father.—When he underſtood my ſituation, he aſſured me that he would do me all the ſervice in his power, both by his advice and otherwiſe; and while he ſpoke theſe words, eyed me with great attention, walking round me ſeveral times, and muttering, "O Ch——ſt! O Ch——ſt! ſat a ſaight is here."—I ſoon gueſſed the reaſon of his ejaculation,

and faid, "I fuppofe, Sir, you are not pleafed with my drefs."—"Drefs, (anfwered he) you may caal it fat you pleafe in your country, but I vaw to Gad 'tis a mafquerade here.—No chriftian will admit fuch a figure into his hawfe.—Upon my confcience, I wonder the dogs did not hunt you!—Did you pafs through St. James's market?—God blefs my eye-faight! you look like a coufin-german of Euran Outang."—I began to be a little ferious at this difcourfe, and afked him, if he thought I fhould obtain entrance to-morrow at the houfe of Mr. Cringer, on whom I chiefly depended, for an introduction into bufinefs—"Mr. Cringer, Mr. Cringer, (replied he, fcratching his cheek) may be a very honeft gentleman—I know nothing to the contrary; but is your fole depεndance upon him?"—I pulled out Mr. Crab's letter, and told him the foundation of my hopes; at which he ftared at me, and repeated, "Ch—ft!"—I began to conceive bad omens from this behaviour of his, and begged he would affift me with his advice; which he promifed to give very frankly; and as a fpecimen, directed us to a periwig warehoufe, in the neighbourhood, in order to be accommodated; laying ftrong injunctions on me not to appear before Mr. Cringer, till I had parted with thofe carotty locks, which, he faid, were fufficient to beget an antipathy againft me among all mankind. And as we were going to purfue his advice, he called me back, and bid me be fure to deliver my letter into Mr. Cringer's own hand. As we walked along, Strap triumphed greatly in our reception with his friend, who (it feems) had affured him, he would in a day or two provide for him, with fome good mafter; and "now (fays he) you fhall fee how I will fit you with a wig.—There's ne'er a barber in London (and that's a bold word) can palm a rotten caul, or a pennyweight of dead hair upon me."—And indeed this zealous adherent did wrangle fo long with the merchant, that he was defired twenty times to leave the fhop, and fee if he could get one cheaper elfewhere. At length I made choice of a good handfome bob, for which I paid ten

ten ſhillings, and returned to our lodging, where Strap, in a moment, rid me of that hair which had given the ſchoolmaſter ſo much offence.

We got up next day betimes, having been informed thar Mr. Cringer gave audience by candle-light to all his dependants, he himſelf being obliged to attend the levee of my lord Terrier, at break of day; becauſe his lordſhip made one at the miniſter's between eight and nine o'clock.—When we came to Mr. Cringer's door, Strap, to give an inſtance of his politeneſs, ran to the knocker, which he employed ſo loud and ſo long, that he alarmed the whole ſtreet; and a window opening in the ſecond ſtory of the next houſe, a chamber pot was diſcharged upon him ſo ſucceſsfully, that the poor barber was wet to the ſkin, while I, being luckily at ſome diſtance, eſcaped the unſavory deluge.—In the mean time a footman opening the door, and ſeeing no body in the ſtreet but us, aſked, with a ſtern countenance, if it was I who made ſuch a damn'd noiſe, and what I wanted.—I told him I had buſineſs with his maſter, whom I deſired to ſee. Upon which he clapped the door in my face, telling me, I muſt learn better manners before I could have acceſs to his maſter. Vexed at this diſappointment, I turned my reſentment againſt Strap, whom I ſharply reprimanded for his preſumption; but he, not in the leaſt regarding what I ſaid, wrung the urine out of his periwig, and lifting up a large ſtone, flung it with ſuch force againſt the ſtreet door of that houſe from whence he had been bedewed, that the lock giving way, it flew wide open, and he took to his heels, leaving me to follow him as I could.—Indeed there was no time for deliberation; I therefore purſued him with all the ſpeed I could exert until we found ourſelves, about the dawn, in a ſtreet we did not know. Here as we wandered along, gaping about, a very decent ſort of a man paſſing by me, ſtopped of a ſudden, and took up ſomething, which, having examined, he turned, and preſented it to me with theſe words, "Sir, you have dropt half a crown."—I was not a little ſurpriſed at this in-

ſtance of honeſty, and told him it did not belong to me; but he bid me recollect, and ſee if all my money was ſafe: upon which I pulled out my purſe (for I had bought one ſince I came to town) and reckoning my money in my hand, which was now reduced to five guineas, ſeven ſhillings, and two-pence, aſſured him I had loſt nothing.—" Well then, (ſays he) ſo much the better,—this is a God-ſend—and as you two were preſent when I picked it up, you are entitled to equal ſhares with me."—I was aſtoniſhed at theſe words, and looked upon this perſon to be a prodigy of integrity, but abſolutely refuſed to take any part of the ſum.—" Come, gentlemen, (ſaid he) you are too modeſt—I ſee you are ſtrangers—but you ſhall give me leave to treat you with a wet this cold raw morning."—I would have declined this invitation, but Strap whiſpered to me, that the gentleman would be affronted, and I complied.—" Where ſhall we go? (ſaid the ſtranger) I am quite ignorant of this part of the town."—I informed him that we were in the ſame ſituation: upon which he propoſed to go into the firſt public houſe we ſhould find open; and as we walked together, he began in this manner:—" I find by your tongues you are from Scotland, gentlemen. My grandmother, by the father's ſide, was of your country, and I am ſo prepoſſeſſed in his favour, that I never meet a Scotchman but my heart warms.——The Scots are a very brave people. There is ſcarce a great family in the kingdom that cannot boaſt of ſome exploits performed by its anceſtors many hundred years ago.—There's your Douglaſſes, Gordons, Campbells, Hamiltons.—We have no ſuch ancient families here in England.—Then you are all very well educated—I have known a pedlar talk in Greek and Hebrew, as well as if they had been his mother-tongue.—And for honeſty—I once had a ſervant, his name was Gregory Macgregor; I would have truſted him with untold gold."—This eulogium on my native country gained my affection ſo ſtrongly, that I believe I could have gone to death to ſerve the author; and Strap's eyes

ſwam

ſwam in tears. At length, as we paſſed through a dark narrow lane, we perceived a public-houſe, which we entered: and found a man ſitting by the fire, ſmoaking his pipe, with a pint of purl before him.— Our new acquaintance aſked us, if ever we had drank egg flip? To which queſtion we anſwered in the negative, he aſſured us of a regale, and ordered a quart to be prepared, calling for pipes and tobacco at the ſame time. We found this compoſition very palatable, and drank heartily: the converſation (which was introduced by the gentleman) turning upon the ſnares that young unexperienced people are expoſed to in this metropolis.— He deſcribed a thouſand cheats that are daily practiſed upon the ignorant and unwary; and warned us of them with ſo much good-nature and concern, that we bleſſed the opportunity which threw us in his way.— After we had put the can about for ſome time, our new friend began to yawn, telling us he had been up all night with a ſick perſon; and propoſed we ſhould have recourſe to ſome diverſion to keep him awake.—"Suppoſe (ſaid he) we ſhould take a hand at whiſt for paſtime.—But let me ſee, that won't do, there's only three of us; and I cannot play at any other game.—The truth is, I ſeldom or never play but out of complaiſance, or at ſuch a time as this, when I am in danger of falling aſleep."—Although I was not much inclined to gaming, I felt no averſion to paſs an hour or two at cards with a friend; and knowing that Strap underſtood as much of the matter as I, made no ſcruple of ſaying, "I wiſh we could find a fourth hand." While we were in this perplexity, the perſon whom we found in the houſe at our entrance, over-hearing our diſcourſe, took the pipe from his mouth very gravely, and accoſted us thus: "Gentlemen, my pipe is out, you ſee (ſhaking the aſhes into the fire) and rather than you ſhould be baulked, I don't care if I take a hand with you for a trifle.—but remember I won't play for any thing of conſequence."—We accepted his offer with pleaſure: having cut for partners, it fell to my lot to play with

him

him, againſt our friend and Strap, for three-pence a game.—We were ſo ſuccefsful, that in a ſhort time I was half a crown gainer: when the gentleman whom we had met in the ſtreet, obſerving we had no luck to-day, propoſed to leave off, or change partners.—By this time I was inflamed with my good fortune, and the expectation of improving it, as I perceived the two ſtrangers played but indifferently: therefore I voted for giving him his revenge: and cutting again, Strap and I (to our mutual ſatisfaction) happened to be partners—My good fortune attended me ſtill, and in leſs than an hour, we had got thirty ſhillings of their money; for as they loſt they grew the keener, and doubled ſtakes every time. At laſt the inconſtant goddeſs began to veer about, and we were very ſoon ſtript of all our gain, and about forty ſhillings of our own money. This loſs mortified me extremely, and had a viſible effect on the muſcles of Strap's face, which lengthened apace; but our antagoniſts perceiving our condition, kindly permitted us to retrieve our loſs, and conſole ourſelves with a new acquiſition. Then my companion wiſely ſuggeſted it was time to be gone; upon which the perſon who had joined us in the houſe began to curſe the cards; and muttered that we were indebted to fortune only for what we had got, no part of our ſucceſs being owing to our good play. This inſinuation nettled me ſo much, that I challenged him to a game at piquet for a crown; and he was with difficulty perſuaded to accept the invitation.—This conteſt ended in leſs than an hour, to my inexpreſſible affliction, who loſt every ſhilling of my own money, Strap abſolutely refuſing to ſupply me with a ſix-pence. The gentleman, at whoſe requeſt we had come in, perceiving by my diſconſolate looks the ſituation of my heart, which well nigh burſted with grief and reſentment, when the other ſtranger got up, and went away with my money; began in this manner: I am truly afflicted at your bad luck, and would willingly repair it, was it in my power. But what in the name of goodneſs could provoke you to tempt your fate ſo long?
It

It is always a maxim with gamesters to pursue success as far as it will go, and to stop whenever fortune shifts about—You are a young man, and your passions too impetuous; you must learn to govern them better:—However, there is no experience like that which is bought; you will be the better for this, the longest day you have to live.—As for the fellow who has got your money, I don't half like him.—Did not you observe me tip you the wink, to leave off in time?——I answered, No. "No, (continued he) you was too eager to mind any thing but the game.—But, harkee, (said he, in a whisper) are you satisfied of that man's honesty? his looks are a little suspicious:—But I may be mistaken; he made a great many grimaces when he stood behind you: this is a very wicked town." I told him I was very well convinced of my comrade's integrity, and that the grimaces he mentioned, were doubtless owing to his anxiety at my loss—"O ho! if that be the case, I ask his pardon.—Landlord, see what's to pay."—The reckoning amounted to eighteen pence, which having discharged, the gentleman shook us both by the hand, and saying he should be very glad to see us again, departed.

CHAP. XV.

Strap moralizes—Presents his Purse to me—We inform my Landlord of my Misfortune; he unravels the Mystery—I present myself to Cringer—He recommends and turns me over to Mr. Staytape—I become acquainted with a Fellow Dependant, who explains the Character of Cringer and Staytape—And informs me of the Method to be pursued at the Navy Office and Surgeons'-hall—Strap is employed.

IN our way to our lodging, after a profound silence on both sides, Strap with a hideous groan observed, that we had brought our pigs to a fine market. To this observation I made no reply; and he went on: "God

"God ſend us well out of this place, we have not been in London eight and forty hours, and I believe we have met with eight and forty thouſand misfortunes —We have been jeer'd, reproached, buffeted, piſſed upon, and at laſt ſtript of all our money: and I ſuppoſe by and by we ſhall be ſtript of our ſkins.—Indeed as to the money-part of it, that was owing to our own folly: Solomon ſays, *Bray a fool in a mortar, and he will never be wiſe.* Ah! God help us, an ounce of prudence is worth a pound of gold." This was no time for him to tamper with my diſpoſition, already mad with my loſs, and inflamed with reſentment againſt him for having refuſed me a little money to attempt to retrieve it. I therefore turned towards him with a ſtern countenance, and aſked, "Who he called fool!" Being altogether unaccuſtomed to ſuch looks from me, he ſtood ſtill, and ſtared in my face for ſome time; then with ſome confuſion, uttered, "Fool!—I called nobody fool but myſelf;—I am ſure I am the greateſt fool of the two, for being ſo much concerned at other people's misfortunes:——but *Nemo omnibus horis ſapit*,——that's all—that's all.—Upon which a ſilence enſued that brought us to our lodging, where I threw myſelf upon the bed in an agony of deſpair, reſolved to periſh rather than apply to my companion or any other body for relief; but Strap, who knew my temper, and whoſe heart bled within him at my diſtreſs, after ſome pauſe came to the bed-ſide, and putting a leathern purſe into my hand, burſt into tears, crying, "I know what you think: but I ſcorn your thoughts.——There's all I have in the world, take it, and I'll perhaps get more for you before that be gone.——If not, I'll beg for you, ſteal for you, go through the wide world with you, and ſtarve with you; for though I be a poor cobler's ſon, I am no ſcout."——I was ſo touched with the generous paſſion of this poor creature, that I could not refrain from weeping alſo; and we mingled our tears together for ſome time.——Upon examining the purſe, I found in it two half guineas and half a crown, which I would have

have returned to him, ſaying, he knew better than I how to manage it, but he abſolutely refuſed my propoſal, and told me, it was more reaſonable and decent that he ſhould depend upon me, who was a gentleman, than that I ſhould be controuled by him.

After this friendly conteſt was over, and our minds more at eaſe, we informed our landlord of what had happened to us, taking care to conceal the extremity to which we were reduced. He no ſooner heard the ſtory, than he aſſured us we had been grievouſly impoſed upon by a couple of ſharpers, who were aſſociates; and that this polite, honeſt, friendly, humane perſon, who had treated us ſo civilly, was no other than a raſcally money-dropper, who made it his buſineſs to decoy ſtrangers in that manner, to one of his own haunts; where an accomplice or two were always waiting to aſſiſt in pillaging the prey he had run down.—Here the good man recounted a great many ſtories of people who had been ſeduced, cheated, pilfered, beat,——nay, even murdered by ſuch villains. I was confounded at the artifice and wickedneſs of mankind, and Strap, lifting up his eyes and hands to heaven, prayed that God would deliver him from ſuch ſcenes of iniquity: for ſurely the devil had ſet up his throne in London.——Our landlord being curious to know what reception we had met with at Mr. Cringer's, we acquainted him with the particulars, at which he ſhook his head, and told us we had not gone the right way to work; that there was nothing to be done with a m—b—r of p—m—t without a bribe; and that the ſervant was commonly infected with his maſter's diſeaſe, and expected to be paid for his work as well as his betters.—He therefore adviſed me to give the footman a ſhilling the next time I ſhould deſire admittance to my patron, or elſe I ſhould ſcarce find an opportunity to deliver my letter. Accordingly, next morning, when the door was opened, I ſlipt a ſhilling into his hand, and told him I had a letter for his maſter. —I found the good effects of my liberality; for the fellow let me in immediately, and taking the letter out

of

of my hand, defired me to wait in a kind of paffage for an anfwer. In this place I continued ftanding for three quarters of an hour, during which time I faw a great many young fellows, whom I formerly knew in Scotland, pafs and repafs with an air of familiarity, in their way to and from the audience-chamber; while I was fain to ftand fhivering in the cold, and turn my back to them, that they might not perceive the lownefs of my condition.——At length Mr. Cringer came out to fee a young gentleman to the door, who was no other than 'fquire Gawky, dreffed in a very gay fuit of clothes; at parting, Mr. Cringer fhook him by the hand, and told him he hoped to have the pleafure of his company at dinner. Then turning about towards me he afked what were my commands; when he underftood I was the perfon who had brought the letter from Mr. Crab, he affected to recollect my name, which, however, he pretended he could not do, till he had confulted the letter again: to fave him that trouble, I told him my name was Random—Upon which he went on, "Aye, Aye, Random, Random, Random—I think I remember the name;" and very well he might, for this very individual Mr. Cringer had many a time rode before my grandfather's cloak bag, in quality of a footman.——Well, (fays he) you propofe to go on board a man of war, as furgeon's mate." I replied by a low bow. "I believe it will be a difficult matter (continued he) to procure a warrant, there being already fuch a fwarm of Scotch Surgeons at the Navy Office, in expectation of the next vacancy, that the commiffioners are afraid of being torn to pieces, and have actually applied for a guard to protect them.—However, fome fhips will foon be put in commiffion, and then we fhall fee what's to be done." So faying, he left me, exceedingly mortified at the different reception Mr. Gawky and I had met with, from this upftart, proud, mean member, who, (I imagined) would have been glad of an opportunity to be grateful for the obligations he owed to my family.

At my return, I was furprifed with the agreeable news

news of Strap's being employed on the recommendation of his friend the ſchool-maſter, by a periwig-maker in the neighbourhood, who allowed him five ſhillings per week, beſides bed and board.—I continued to dance attendance every other morning at the levee of Mr. Cringer, during a fortnight, in which time I became acquainted with a young fellow of my own country and profeſſion, who alſo depended on the member's intereſt; but was treated with much more reſpect than I, both by the ſervants and maſter, and often admitted into a parlour, where there was a fire for the convenience of the better ſort of thoſe who waited for him.—Thither I was never permittedto penetrate,on account of myappearance, which was not at all faſhionable; but was obliged to ſtand blowing my fingers in a cold lobby, and take the firſt opportunity of Mr. Cringer's going to the door to ſpeak with him.—One day, while I enjoyed this occaſion, a perſon was introduced, whom Mr. Cringer no ſooner ſaw, than, running towards him, he ſaluted him with a bow to the very ground, and afterwards ſhaking him by the hand with great heartineſs and familiarity, called him his good friend, and aſked very kindly after Mrs. Staytape and the young ladies; then, after a whiſper which continued ſome minutes, wherein I overheard the word *honour* repeated ſeveral times with great emphaſis. Mr. Cringer introduced me to this gentleman, as to a perſon whoſe advice and aſſiſtance I might depend upon; and having given me his direction, followed me to the door, where he told me, I need not give myſelf the trouble to call at his houſe any more, for Mr. Staytape would do my buſineſs.—At that inſtant my fellow dependant coming out after me, overheard the diſcourſe of Mr. Cringer, and making up to me in the ſtreet, accoſted me very civilly: This addreſs I looked upon as no ſmall honour, conſidering the figure he made; for he was dreſſed in a blue frock with a gold button, a green ſilk waiſtcoat trimmed with gold, black velvet breeches, white ſilk ſtockings, ſilver buckles, a gold laced hat, a ſpencer wig, and a ſilver hilted hanger, with

a fine clouded cane in his hand.—" I perceive (said he you are but lately come from Scotland;—pray what may your business with Mr. Cringer be?—I suppose it is no secret—and I may, possibly, give you some advice that will be serviceable; for I have been surgeon's second mate on board of a seventy gun ship, and consequently know a good deal of the world."—I made no scruple to disclose my situation, which when he had learned, he shook his head, and told me he had been pretty much in the same circumstances about a year ago! that he had relied on Cringer's promises, until his money (which was considerable) as well as his credit was quite exhausted: and when he wrote to his relations for a fresh supply, instead of money, he received nothing but reproaches, and the epithets of idle, debauched fellow: that after he had waited at the Navy office many months for a warrant, to no purpose, he was fain to pawn some of his clothes, which raised a small sum, wherewith he bribed the s—t—y, who soon procured a warrant for him, notwithstanding he had affirmed the same day that there was not one vacancy.—That he had gone on board, where he remained nine months, at the end of which the ship was put out of commission: and he said the company were to be paid off in Broad-street the very next day.—That his relations being reconciled to him, had charged him to pay his devoirs regularly to Mr. Cringer, who had informed them by letter, that his interest alone had procured the warrant; in obedience to which command, he came to his levee every morning as I saw, though he looked upon him to be a very pitiful scoundrel.—In conclusion, he asked me if I had yet passed at surgeon's hall? To which question I answered, I did not so much as know it was necessary.—" Necessary, (cried he) O Lord, O Lord! I find I must instruct you—come along with me, and I'll give you some information about that matter."—So saying, he carrried me into an ale-house, where he called for some beer, and bread and cheese, on which we breakfasted. While we sat in this place, he told me I must first go to the

the Navy-office, and write to the board, defiring them to order a letter for me to the Surgeon's-hall, that I might be examined touching my fkill in furgery: That the furgeons, after having examined me, would give me my qualifications fealed up in form of a letter, directed to the commiffioners, which qualification I muft deliver to the fecretary of the board, who would open it in my prefence, and read the contents. After which I muft employ my intereft to be provided for as foon as poffible.—That the expence of his qualification for fecond mate of a third rate amounted to thirteen fhillings, exclufive of the warrant, which coft him half a guinea and half a crown, befides the prefent to the fecretary, which confifted of a three pound twelve piece.—This calculation was like a thunder-bolt to me, whofe whole fortune did not amount to twelve fhillings.—I accordingly made him acquainted with this part of my diftrefs, after having thanked him for his information and advice.—He condoled me on this occafion; but bade me be of good cheer, for he had conceived a friendfhip for me, and would make all things eafy.—He was run out at prefent, but to-morrow or next day he was certain of receiving a confiderable fum; of which he would lend me what would be fufficient to anfwer my exigencies. This frank declaration pleafed me fo much, that I pulled out my purfe and emptied it before him, begging him to take what he pleafed for pocket-expence, until he fhould receive his own money.—With a good deal of preffing he was prevailed upon to take five fhillings, telling me that he might have what money he wanted at any time for the trouble of going into the city: but as he met with me, he would defer his going thither till to-morrow, when I fhould go along with him, and he would put me in a way of acting for myfelf, without a fervile dependance on that rafcal Cringer, much lefs on the loufy taylor to whom I heard him turn you over.—How, (cried I) is Mr. Staytape a taylor?"—"No lefs, I'll affure you, (anfwered he) and, I confefs, more likely to ferve you, than the member: For, provided you

can entertain him with politics and conundrums, you may have credit with him for as many, and as rich clothes as you pleafe."—I told him I was utterly ignorant of both, and fo incenfed at Cringer's ufage, that I would never fet foot within his door again.—After a good deal more converfation, my new acquaintance and I parted, having made an appointment to meet next day at the fame place, in order to fet out for the city. I went immediately to Strap, and related every thing which had happened, but he did not at all approve of my being fo forward to lend money to a ftranger, efpecially as we had already been fo much impofed upon by appearances. "However, (faid he) if you are fure he is a Scotchman, I believe you are fafe."

CHAP. XVI.

My new Acquaintance breaks an Appointment—I proceed by myfelf to the Navy Office—Addrefs myfelf to a Perfon there, who affifts me with his Advice—Write to the Board—They grant me a Letter to the Surgeons at the Hall—am informed of the Beau's name and character—Find him—He makes me his Confidant in an Amour—defires me to pawn my Linen for his Occafions—I recover what I lent him—Some curious Obfervations of Strap on that Occafion—His Vanity.

IN the morning I rofe and went to the place of rendezvous, where I waited two hours in vain; and was fo exafperated againft him for breaking his appointment, that I fet out for the city by myfelf, in hope of finding the villain, and being revenged on him for his breach of promife.—At length I found myfelf at the Navy-office, which I entered, and faw crowds of young fellows walking below, many of whom made no better appearance than myfelf.—I confulted the phifiognomy of each, and at laft made up to one whofe countenance I liked; and afked if he could inftruct me in the form of the letter which was to be fent to the board, to obtain an

order

order for examination: He anſwered me in broad Scotch, that he would ſhew me the copy of what he had writ for himſelf, by the direction of another who knew the form: and accordingly pulled it out of his pocket for my peruſal; and told me, that if I was expeditious, I might ſend it in to the board before dinner, for they did no buſineſs in the afternoon. He then went with me to a coffee-houſe hard by, where I wrote the letter, which was immediately delivered to the meſſenger; who told me I might expect an order to morrow about the ſame time.—Having tranſacted this piece of buſineſs, my mind was a good deal compoſed; and as I met with ſo much civility from this ſtranger, I deſired further acquaintance with him, fully reſolved, however, not to be deceived by him ſo much to my prejudice as I had been by the beau.—He agreed to dine with me at the cook's ſhop which I frequented; and on our way thither, carried me to 'Change, where I was in ſome hopes of finding Mr. Jackſon (for that was the name of the perſon who had broke his appointment)—I ſought him there to no purpoſe, and on our way towards the other end of the town, imparted to my companion his behaviour towards me: Upon which, he gave me to underſtand, that he was no ſtranger to the name of Beau Jackſon (ſo he was called at the navy-office) although he did not know him perſonally; that he had the character of a good-natured careleſs fellow, who had no ſcruple of borrowing from any body that would lend; that moſt people who knew him believed he had a good principle at bottom; but his extravagance was ſuch, he would probably never have it in his power to manifeſt the honeſty of his intention.—This account made me ſweat for my five ſhillings, which I nevertheleſs did not altogether deſpair of recovering, provided I could find out the debtor—This young man likewiſe added another circumſtance of Squire Jackſon's hiſtory, which was, that being deſtitute of all means to equip himſelf for ſea, when he received his laſt warrant, he had been recommended to a perſon who lent him a little money, after he had ſigned a will and

power, entitling that perſon to lift his wages when they ſhould become due, as alſo to inherit his effects in caſe of his death.—That he was ſtill under the tutorage and direction of that gentleman, who advanced him ſmall ſums from time to time upon this ſecurity, at the rate of 50 *per cent.* But at preſent his credit was very low, becauſe his funds would do little more than pay what he had already received, this moderate intereſt included.—After the ſtranger (whoſe name was Thomſon) had entertained me with this account of Jackſon, he informed me that he himſelf had paſſed for third mate of a third rate, about four months ago: ſince which time, he had conſtantly attended at the Navy-office, in hope of a warrant, having been aſſured from the beginning, both by a Scotch member, and one of the Commiſſioners to whom the member recommended him, that he ſhould be put into the firſt vacancy; notwithſtanding which promiſe he had the mortification to ſee ſix or ſeven appointed in the ſame ſtation almoſt every week—that now being utterly impoveriſhed, his ſole hope conſiſted in the promiſe of a friend, lately come to town, to lend him a ſmall matter for a preſent to the ſ—t—y; without which he was perſuaded he might wait a thouſand years to no purpoſe.—I conceived a mighty liking for this young fellow, which, (I believe) proceeded from the ſimilitude of our fortunes: We ſpent the whole day together: and as he lived at Wapping, I deſired him to take a ſhare of my bed.

Next day we returned to the Navy-office, where, after being called before the board, and queſtioned about the place of my nativity and education, they ordered a letter to be made out for me, which, upon paying half a crown to the clerk, I received, and delivered into the hands of the clerk at Surgeons' hall, together with a ſhilling for his trouble in regiſtering my name.——By this time my whole ſtock was diminiſhed to two ſhillings, and I ſaw not the leaſt proſpect of relief, even for preſent ſubſiſtence, much leſs to enable me to pay the fees at Surgeons'-hall for my examination, which would

come

come on in a fortnight.—In this ſtate of perplexity, I conſulted Strap, who aſſured me, he would pawn every thing he had in the world, even to his razors, before I ſhould want: but this expedient I abſolutely rejected, telling him, I would a thouſand times rather liſt for a ſoldier, of which I had ſome thoughts, than be any longer a burden to him.—At the word ſoldier, he grew pale as death, and begged on his knees I would think no more of that ſcheme. "God preſerve us all in our right wits! (cried he) would you turn ſoldier, and perhaps be ſent abroad againſt the Spaniards, where you muſt ſtand and be ſhot at like a woodcock?—Heaven keep cold lead out of my carcaſe! and let me die in a bed like a chriſtian, as all my forefathers have done.—What ſignifies all the riches and honours of this life, if one enjoys not content.—And in the next there is no reſpect of perſons. Better be a poor honeſt barber, with a good conſcience, and time to repent of my ſins upon my death-bed, than be cut off (God bleſs us) by a muſket ſhot, as it were, in the very flower of one's age, in the purſuit of riches and fame.—What ſignify riches (my dear friend!) do not they make unto themſelves wings, as the wiſe man ſaith: and does not Horace obſerve, *Non domus aut fundus, non æris acervus aut auri, ægroto domino deduxit corpore febrem, non animo curas.*—I could moreover mention many other ſayings in contempt of riches, both from the bible and other good books: but as I know you are not very fond of thoſe things, I ſhall only aſſure you, that if you take on to be a ſoldier I will do the ſame; and then if we ſhould both be ſlain, you will not only have your own blood to anſwer for, but mine alſo: And peradventure the lives of all thoſe whom we ſhall kill in battle.—Therefore I pray you conſider whether you will ſit down contented with ſmall things, and ſhare the fruits of my induſtry in peace, till Providence ſhall ſend us better tidings, or by your deſpair plunge both our ſouls and bodies into everlaſting perdition, which God of his infinite mercy forbid."—I could not help ſmiling at this harangue, which

was

was delivered with great earneſtneſs, the tears ſtanding in his eyes all the time; and promiſed to do nothing of that ſort without his conſent and concurrence.—He was much comforted at this declaration; and told me in a few days he ſhould receive a week's wages which ſhould be at my ſervice, but adviſed me, in the mean time, to go in queſt of Jackſon, and recover, if poſſible, what he had borrowed of me.—I accordingly trudged about from one end of the town to the other for ſeveral days without being able to learn any thing certain concerning him. And, one day, being extremely hungry, and allured by the ſteams that regaled my noſtrils from a boiling cellar, I went down with an intention to gratify my appetite with two-penny worth of beef; when, to my no ſmall ſurpriſe, I found Mr. Jackſon ſitting at dinner with a footman.—He no ſooner perceived me than he got up, and ſhook me by the hand, ſaying, "He was glad to ſee me, for he intended to have called at my lodgings in the afternoon."—I was ſo well pleaſed with this rencounter, and the apologies he made for not keeping his appointment, that I forgot my reſentment, and ſat down to dinner, with the happy expectation of not only recovering my own money before we ſhould part, but alſo of reaping the benefit of his promiſe, to lend me wherewithal to paſs examination; and this hope my ſanguine complexion ſuggeſted, though the account Thomſon gave me of him ought to have moderated my expectation.—When we had feaſted ſumptuouſly, he took his leave of the footman, and adjourned with me to an ale-houſe hard by, where, after ſhaking me by the hand again, he began thus: " I ſuppoſe you think me a ſad dog, Mr. Random: and I do confeſs that appearances are againſt me.—But I dare ſay you will forgive me when I tell you, my not coming at the time appointed was owing to a peremptory meſſage I received from a certain lady, whom—harkee (but this is a great ſecret) I am to marry very ſoon.—You think this ſtrange perhaps, but it is not leſs true for all that—a five thouſand pounder, I'll aſſure you, beſides expectations

tions-—For my own part, devil take me if I know what any woman can ſee engaging about me,——but a whim you know,——and then one would not baulk one's good fortune.—You ſaw that footman who dined with us—he's one of the honeſteſt fellows that ever wore a livery.—You muſt know, it was by his means I was introduced to her, for he made me firſt acquainted with her woman, who is his miſtreſs——aye, many a crown has he and his ſweetheart had of my money——but what of that? things are now brought to a bearing. —I have (come a little this way) I have propoſed marriage, and the day is fixt—ſhe's a charming creature! writes like an angel.—O lord! ſhe can repeat all the Engliſh tragedies as well as e'er a player in Drury-Lane! and indeed is ſo fond of plays, that to be near the ſtage, ſhe has taken lodgings in a court hard by the theatre.—But you ſhall ſee—you ſhall ſee—here's the laſt letter ſhe ſent me."—With theſe words he put into my hand, and I read (to the beſt of my remembrance) as follows:

"Deer Kreeter,

AS you are the amiable hopjack of my contemplayſhins, you ayder is infernally ſkimming before my keymerycal fanſee, when Murfy ſends his puppies to the heys of ſlipping mortals; and when Febus ſhines from his merrydying throne: Whereupon, I ſhall canſeeif old whorie time has loſt his pinners, as alſo Cupid his harrows, until thou enjoy ſweet propoſe in the loafſeek harms of thy faithfool to commend,

Wingar yeard, Droory-Lane,
January 12th." CLAYRENDER."

While I was reading, he ſeemed to be in an ecſtaſy, rubbing his hands, and burſting out into fits of laughter; at laſt he caught hold of my hand, and ſqueezing it, cried, "There is a ſtyle for you! what do you think of this billet-doux?" I anſwered, it might be ſublime for ought I knew, for it was altogether above my comprehenſion."—"O ho! (ſaid he) I believe it is—both tender

tender and ſublime—ſhe's a divine creature!—and ſo doats upon me!—Let me ſee—what ſhall I do with this money, when I have once got it into my hands?—In the firſt place I ſhall do for you—I'm a man of few words—but ſay no more,—that's determined—whether would you adviſe me to purchaſe ſome poſt, by which I may riſe in the ſtate; or lay out my wife's fortune in land, and retire to the country at once?" I gave my opinion without heſitation, that he could not do better than buy an eſtate and improve; eſpecially ſince he had already ſeen ſo much of the world. Then I launched out into the praiſes of a country life, as deſcribed by the poets whoſe works I had read—He ſeemed to reliſh my advice, but withal told me, that although he had ſeen a great deal of the world both by land and ſea, having cruized three whole months in the channel, yet he ſhould not be ſatisfied until he had viſited France, which he propoſed to do before he ſhould ſettle; and to carry his wife along with him—I had nothing to object to this propoſal; and aſked how ſoon he hoped to be happy—"As to that (he replied) nothing obſtructs my happineſs, but the want of a little ready caſh—for you muſt know, my friend in the city has gone out of town for a week or two; and I unfortunately miſſed my pay at Broad ſtreet, by being detained too long by the dear charmer—but there will be a recall at Chatham next week, whither the ſhip's books are ſent, and I have commiſſioned a friend in that place to receive the money."—If that be all (ſaid I) there's no great harm in deferring your marriage a few days.—Yes faith! but there is, (ſaid he) you don't know how many rivals I have, who would take all advantages againſt me.—I would not baulk the impatience of her paſſion for the world—the leaſt appearance of coldneſs and indifference would ruin all; and ſuch offers don't occur every day." I acquieſced in this obſervation, and inquired how he intended to proceed. "At this queſtion he rubbed his chin, and ſaid, "Why truly I muſt be obliged to ſome friend or other—do you know

nobody

nobody that would lend me a ſmall ſum for a day or two!—I aſſured him I was ſuch an utter ſtranger in London, that I did not believe I could borrow a guinea if my life depended upon it.—"No! (ſaid he) that's hard—that's hard—I wiſh I had any thing to pawn—upon my ſoul you have got excellent linen (feeling the ſleeve of my ſhirt) how many ſhirts of that kind have you got?"—I anſwered, "Six ruffled and ſix plain."—At which he teſtified great ſurpriſe, and ſwore that no gentleman ought to have more than four—"How many d'ye think I have got (continued he); but this and another as I hope to be ſaved!—I dare ſay we ſhall be able to raiſe a good ſum out of your ſuperfluity—let me ſee—let me ſee—each of theſe ſhirts is worth ſixteen ſhillings at a moderate computation—now ſuppoſe we pawn them for half price—eight times eight is ſixty-four, that's three pounds four—z—ds! that will do—give me your hand."——"Softly, ſoftly, Mr. Jackſon, (ſaid I) don't diſpoſe of my linen without my conſent: firſt pay me the crown you owe me, and then we ſhall talk of other matters."—He proteſted he had not above one ſhilling in his pocket, but that he would pay me out of the firſt of the money raiſed from the ſhirts.—This piece of aſſurance incenſed me ſo much, that I ſwore I would not part with him until I had received ſatisfaction for what I had lent him, and as for the ſhirts I would not pawn any one of them to ſave him from the gallows.—At this expreſſion he laughed aloud, and then complained it was damned hard, that I ſhould refuſe him a trifle, that would infallibly enable him not only to make his own fortune, but mine alſo.—"You talk of pawning my ſhirts (ſaid I), ſuppoſe you ſell this hanger, Mr. Jackſon? I believe it would fetch a good round ſum?"—"No, hang it (ſaid he) I can't appear decently without my hanger, or egad it ſhould go." However, ſeeing me inflexible with regard to my linen, he at length unbuckled his hanger, and ſhewing me the ſign of the three blue balls, deſired me to carry it thither and pawn it for two guineas. This office I ſhould by

no

no means have performed, had I ſeen any likelihood of having my money otherwiſe; but not willing, out of a piece of falſe delicacy, to neglect the only opportunity I ſhould perhaps ever have, I ventured into a pawn-broker's ſhop, where I demanded two guineas on the pledge, in the name of Thomas Williams—" Two guineas! (ſaid the pawn-broker, looking at the hanger) this piece of goods has been here ſeveral times before for thirty ſhillings; however, ſince I believe the gentleman to whom it belongs will redeem it, he ſhall have what he wants; and accordingly he payed me the money, which I carried to the houſe where I had left Jackſon, and calling for change, counted out to him ſeven and thirty ſhillings, reſerved the other five for myſelf.

After looking at the money ſome time he ſaid. "D—n it! it don't ſignify—this won't do my buſineſs; ſo you may as well take half a guinea or a whole one, as the five ſhillings you have kept."—I thanked him kindly, but I refuſed to accept of any more than was my due, becauſe I had no proſpect of repaying it.—Upon which declaration he ſtared in my face, and told me I was exceſſively raw, or I would not talk in that manner:—" Blood, (cried he) I have a very bad opinion of a young fellow who won't borrow of his friend, when he is in want—'tis the ſign of a ſneaking ſpirit.—Come, come, Random, give me back the five ſhillings, and take this half guinea, and if ever you are able to pay me I believe you will;—if not, d—n me if ever I aſk for it."——When I reflected on my preſent neceſſity, I ſuffered myſelf to be perſuaded, and after making my acknowledgments to Mr. Jackſon, who offered to treat me with a play, I returned to my lodgings with a much better opinion of this gentleman than I had in the morning: and at night imparted my day's adventure to Strap, who rejoiced at my good luck, saying, " I told you if he was a Scotchman you was ſafe enough—and who knows but this marriage may make us all.—You have heard, I ſuppoſe, as how a countryman of ours, a journeyman baker, ran away with a great lady of this town,

and now keeps his coach.—Ecod, I ſay nothing; but yeſterday morning, as I was ſhaving a gentleman at his own houſe, there was a young lady in the room—a fine buxom wench, i'faith! and ſhe threw ſo many ſheeps eyes at a certain perſon, whom I ſhall not name, that my heart went knock, knock, knock, like a fulling mill, and my hand ſh—ſh—ſhook ſo much that I ſliced a piece of ſkin off the gentleman's noſe: whereby he ſwore a deadly oath, and was going to horſewhip me, when ſhe prevented him, and made my peace.—*Omen haud malum!* Is not a journeyman barber as good as a journeyman baker? The only difference is, the baker uſes flour for the belly, and the barber uſes it for the head; and as the head is a more noble member than the belly, ſo is a barber more noble than a baker——for what's the belly without the head?——Beſides, I am told he could neither read nor write; now you know I can do both: and moreover ſpeak Latin—but I will ſay no more, for I deſpiſe vanity—nothing is more vain than vanity."——With theſe words he pulled out of his pocket a wax candle's end, which he applied to his forehead; and, upon examination, I found he had combed his own hair over the toupee of his wig, and was indeed in his whole dreſs become a very ſmart ſhaver.——I congratulated him on his proſpect with a ſatyrical ſmile, which he underſtood very well; and ſhaking his head, obſerved I had very little faith, but the truth would come to light in ſpite of my incredulity.

CHAP. XVII.

I go to Surgeon's Hall, where I meet with Mr. Jackson —Am examined—A fierce Dispute arises between two of the Examiners —Jackson disguises himself to attract Respect —Is detected—In hazard of being sent to Bridewell—He treats us at a Tavern—Carries us to a Night-House—A troublesome Adventure there—We are committed to the Round-House—Carried before a Justice—His Behaviour.

WITH the assistance of this faithful adherent, who gave me almost all the money he earned, I preserved my half guinea entire, till the day of examination, when I went with a quaking heart to Surgeon's Hall, in order to undergo that ceremony.—Among a crowd of young fellows who walked in the outward hall I perceived Mr. Jackson, to whom I immediately went up, and enquiring into the state of his amour, understood it was still undetermined, by reason of his friend's absence, and the delay of the recal at Chatham, which put it out of his power to bring it to a conclusion.—I then asked what his business was in this place; he replied, he was resolved to have two strings to his bow, that in case the one failed, he might use the other; and with this view he was to pass that night for a higher qualification.—At that instant a young fellow came out from the place of examination, with a pale countenance, his lip quivering, and his looks as wild as if he had seen a ghost.—He no sooner appeared, than we all flocked about him with the utmost eagerness to know what reception he had met with; which (after some pause) he described, recounting all the questions they had asked, with the answers he made. In this manner we obliged no less than twelve to recapitulate, which, now the danger was past, they did with pleasure, before it fell to my lot: at length the beadle called my name, with a voice that made me tremble as much as if it had been the sound of the last trumpet: However, there was no remedy: I was conducted into a

large

large hall, where I ſaw about a dozen of grim faces ſitting at a long table; one of whom bade me come forward, in ſuch an imperious tone that I was actually for a minute or two bereft of my ſenſes.—The firſt queſtion he put to me was, "Where was you born?" To which I anſwered, "in Scotland"—"In Scotland, (ſaid he) I know that very well—we have ſcarce any other countrymen to examine here—You Scotchmen have overſpread us of late as the locuſts did Egypt:—I aſk you in what part of Scotland was you born?"—I named the place of my nativity, which he had never before heard of: he then proceeded to interrogate me about my age, the town where I ſerved my time, with the term of my apprenticeſhip; and, when I informed him that I ſerved three years only, he fell into a violent paſſion; ſwore it was a ſhame and a ſcandal to ſend ſuch raw boys into the world as Surgeons; that it was a great preſumption in me, and an affront upon the Engliſh, to pretend to ſufficient ſkill in my buſineſs, having ſerved ſo ſhort a time, when every apprentice in England was bound ſeven years at leaſt;—that my friends would have done better if they had made me a weaver or ſhoemaker, but their pride would have me a gentleman (he ſuppoſed) at any rate, and their poverty could not afford the neceſſary education.—This exordium did not at all contribute to the recovery of my ſpirits, but on the contrary reduced me to ſuch a ſituation that I was ſcarce able to ſtand; which being perceived by a plump gentleman who ſat oppoſite to me, with a ſkull before him, he ſaid, Mr. Snarler was too ſevere upon the young man; and turning towards me, told me, I need not be afraid, for nobody would do me any harm; then bidding me take time to recollect myſelf, he examined me, touching the operation of the trepan, and was very well ſatisfied with my anſwers.—The next perſon who queſtioned me was a wag, who began by aſking if I had ever ſeen amputation performed; and I replying in the affirmative, he ſhook his head, and ſaid, What! upon a dead ſubject, I ſuppoſe? If (continued he) during an

 engagement

engagement at ſea, a man ſhould be brought to you with his head ſhot off, how would you behave?"—After ſome heſitation, I owned ſuch a caſe had never come under my obſervation; neither did I remember to have ſeen any method of cure propoſed for ſuch accidents in any of the ſyſtems of ſurgery I had peruſed. Whether it was owing to the ſimplicity of my anſwer, or to the archneſs of the queſtion, I know not, but every member at the board deigned to ſmile, except Mr. Snarler, who ſeemed to have very little of the *animal riſibile* in his conſtitution.—The facetious member, encouraged by the ſucceſs of the laſt joke, went on thus: "Suppoſe you was called to a patient of a plethoric habit, who had been bruiſed by a fall, what would you do?" I anſwered I would bleed him immediately. "What, (ſaid he) before you had tied up his arm?"—But this ſtroke of wit not anſwering his expectation, he deſired me to advance to the gentleman who ſat next to him; and who with a pert air, aſked what method of cure I would follow in wounds of the inteſtines.—I repeated the method of cure as it is preſcribed by the beſt chirurgical writers; which he heard to an end, and then ſaid, with a ſupercilious ſmile, "So you think by ſuch treatment the patient might recover?"—I told him I ſaw nothing to make me think otherwiſe.—"That may be (reſumed he) I wont anſwer for your foreſight; but did you ever know a caſe of this kind ſucceed?" I acknowledged I did not; and was about to tell him I had never ſeen a wounded inteſtine; but he ſtopt me, by ſaying with ſome precipitation, "nor ever will.—I affirm that all wounds of the inteſtines, whether great or ſmall, are mortal."—"Pardon, me, brother, (ſays the fat gentleman) there is very good authority"—Here he was interrupted by the other, with "Sir, excuſe me, I deſpiſe all authority.—*Nullius in verba*—I ſtand upon my own bottom." "But, Sir, Sir, (replied his antagoniſt) the reaſon of the thing ſhews."—"A fig for reaſon, (cried this ſufficient member) I laugh at reaſon, give me ocular demonſtration."—The corpulent gentleman began to wax warm, and obſerved that no man

acquainted

acquainted with the anatomy of the parts would advance ſuch an extravagant aſſertion.—This *inuendo* enraged the other ſo much, that he ſtarted up, and in a furious tone exclaimed: "What Sir! do you queſtion my knowledge in anatomy?—By this time, all the examiners had eſpouſed the opinion of one or other of the diſputants, and raiſed their voices altogether, when the chairman commanded ſilence, and ordered me to withdraw. In leſs than a quarter of an hour I was called in again, received my qualifications ſealed up, and was ordered to pay five ſhillings.—I laid down my half guinea upon the table, and ſtood ſome time, until one of them bade me be gone; to this I replied, I will when I have got my change; upon which another threw me five ſhillings and ſixpence, ſaying, I ſhould not be a true Scotchman if I went away without my change. I was afterwards obliged to give three ſhillings and ſixpence to the beadles, and a ſhilling to an old woman who ſwept the hall: This diſburſement ſunk my finances to thirteen pence halfpenny, with which I was ſneaking off, when Jackſon perceiving it, came up to me, and begged I would tarry for him, and he would accompany me to the other end of the town, as ſoon as his examination ſhould be over. I could not refuſe this to a perſon that was ſo much my friend—but I was aſtoniſhed at the change of his dreſs, which was varied in half an hour from what I have already deſcribed, to a very groteſque faſhion.—His head was covered with an old ſmoaked tye-wig, that did not boaſt one crooked hair, and a ſlouched hat over it, which would have very well become a chimney-ſweeper or a duſtman; his neck was adorned with a black crape, the ends of which he twiſted and fixed in the button-hole of a ſhabby great coat that wrapped up his whole body; his white ſilk ſtockings were converted into black worſted hoſe; and his countenance was rendered venerable by wrinkles, and a beard of his own painting.—When I expreſſed my ſurprize at this metamorphoſis, he laughed, and told me, it was done by the advice and aſſiſtance of a friend who

lived over the way, and would certainly produce ſomething very much to his advantage; for it gave him the appearance of age, which never fails of attracting reſpect. I applauded his ſagacity, and waited with impatience for the effects of it. At length he was called in; but whether the oddneſs of his appearance excited a curioſity more than uſual in the board, or his behaviour was not ſuitable to his figure, I know not, he was diſcovered to be an impoſtor, and put into the hands of the beadle, in order to be ſent to Bridewell. So that inſtead of ſeeing him come out with a chearful countenance, and a ſurgeon's qualification in his hand, I perceived him led through the outward hall as a priſoner; and was very much alarmed and anxious to know the occaſion; when he called, with a lamentable voice and pitious aſpect to me, and ſome others who knew him; "For God's ſake, gentlemen, bear witneſs that I am the ſame individual John Jackſon, who ſerved as ſurgeon's ſecond mate on board the Elizabeth, or elſe I ſhall go to Bridewell."—It would have been impoſſible for the moſt auſtere hermit that ever lived, to have refrained from laughing at his appearance and addreſs; we, therefore, indulged ourſelves a good while at his expence, and afterwards pleaded his cauſe ſo effectually with the beadle, who was gratified with half a crown, that the priſoner was diſmiſſed; and in a few moments reſumed his former gaity;—ſwearing ſince the board had refuſed his money, he would ſpend it every ſhilling before he went to bed, in treating his friends; at the ſame time inviting us all to favour him with our company. It was now ten o'clock at night, and as I had a great way to walk through the ſtreets, that were utterly unknown to me, I was prevailed upon to be of their party, in hopes he would afterwards accompany me to my lodgings, according to his promiſe. He conducted us to his friend's houſe, who kept a tavern over the way, where he continued drinking punch, until the liquor mounted up to our heads, and made us all extremely frolicſome: I in particular was ſo much elevated that nothing would ſerve me but a wench, at which demand

mand Jackſon expreſſed much joy, and aſſured me I ſhould have my deſire before we parted.—Accordingly, when he had paid the reckoning, we ſallied out, roaring and ſinging; and where conducted by our leader to a place of nocturnal entertainment, where I immediately attached myſelf to a fair one, with whom I propoſed to ſpend the remaining part of the night; but ſhe not reliſhing my appearance, refuſed to grant my requeſt before I ſhould have made her an acknowledgment, which not ſuiting with my circumſtances, we broke off our correſpondence to my no ſmall mortification and reſentment, becauſe I thought the mercenary creature had not done juſtice to my merit.—In the mean time, Mr. Jackſon's dreſs had attracted the inclinations and aſſiduities of two or three nymphs, who loaded him with careſſes, in return for the arrack punch with which he treated them; till at length, notwithſtanding the ſprightly ſallies of thoſe charmers, ſleep began to exert his power over us all: and our conductor called "To pay."—When the bill was brought, which amounted to twelve ſhillings, he put his hand in his pocket, but might have ſaved himſelf the trouble, for his purſe was gone. This accident diſconcerted him a good deal at firſt, but after ſome recollection, he ſeized the two dulcineas, who ſat by him, one in each hand; and ſwore if they did not immediately reſtore his money, he would charge a conſtable with them.—The good lady at the bar ſeeing what paſſed, whiſpered ſomething to the drawer, who went out; and then with great compoſure aſked what was the matter?—Jackſon told her he was robbed, and ſwore if ſhe refuſed him ſatisfaction, he would have her and her whores committed to Bridewell.—"Robbed, (cried ſhe) robbed in my houſe! Gentlemen and ladies, I take you all to witneſs this perſon has ſcandalized my reputation."—At this inſtant ſeeing the conſtable and watch enter, ſhe proceeded, "What, you muſt not only endeavour by your falſe aſperſions to ruin my character; but even commit an aſſault upon my family? Mr. Conſtable, I charge you with this uncivil perſon, who has been

been guilty of a riot here; I ſhall take care and bring an action againſt him for defamation."—While I was reflecting on this melancholy event, which had made me quite ſober, the lady, whoſe favours I had ſolicited, being piqued at ſome repartee that paſſed between us, cried, "They are all concerned;"—and deſired the conſtable to take us all into cuſtody, an arreſt which was performed inſtantly, to the utter aſtoniſhment and deſpair of us all, except Jackſon, who having been often in ſuch ſcrapes, was very little concerned, and charged the conſtable, in his turn, with the landlady and her whole bevy: Upon which we were carried all together priſoners to the round houſe; (where Jackſon, after a word of comfort to us,) informed the conſtable of his being robbed, to which he ſaid he would ſware next morning before the juſtice.—"Aye, aye, (ſays the bawd) we ſhall ſee whoſe oath will moſt ſignify." In a little time the conſtable calling Jackſon into another room, ſpoke to him thus; "I perceive that you and your company are ſtrangers, and am very ſorry for your being involved in ſuch an ugly buſineſs. I have known this woman a great while, ſhe has kept a notorious houſe in the neighbourhood theſe many years; and although often complained of as a nuiſance, ſtill eſcapes, through her intereſt with the j—·—ces, to whom ſhe, and all of her employment, pay contribution quarterly for protection.—As ſhe charged me with you firſt, her complaint will have the preference; and ſhe can procure evidence to ſwear whatever ſhe ſhall pleaſe to deſire of them: So that, unleſs you can make it up before morning, you and your companions may think yourſelves happily quit for a month's hard labour in Bridewell.—Nay, if ſhe ſhould ſwear a robbery or aſſault againſt you, you will be committed to Newgate, and tried next ſeſſions at the Old Bailey, for your life."—This laſt piece of information had ſuch an effect upon Jackſon, that he agreed to make it up, provided his money might be reſtored. The conſtable told him, that inſtead of retrieving what he had loſt, he was pretty certain, it would coſt him ſome more before they would

would come to any compoſition.—But, however, he had compaſſion on him, and would, if he pleaſed, ſound them about a mutual releaſe.—The unfortunate beau thanked him for his friendſhip, and returning to us, acquainted us with the ſubſtance of this dialogue; while the conſtable deſiring to ſpeak in private with our adverſary, carried her into the next room, and pleaded our cauſe ſo effectually, that ſhe condeſcended to make him umpire; He accordingly propoſed an arbitration, to which we gave our aſſent; and he fined each party in three ſhillings, to be laid out in a bowl of punch, wherein we drowned all animoſities, to the inexpreſſible joy of my two late acquaintances and me, who had been in the ſtate of the damned ever ſince Jackſon mentioned Bridewell and Newgate.—By the time we had finiſhed our bowl, to which, by the bye, I had contributed my laſt ſhilling, it was morning; and I propoſed to move homeward, when the conſtable gave me to underſtand, he could diſcharge no priſoner but by order of the juſtice, before whom we muſt appear.—This renewed my chagrin, and I curſed the hour in which I had yielded to Jackſon's invitation.—About nine o'clock we were eſcorted to the houſe of a certain juſtice, not many miles diſtant from Covent-Garden; who no ſooner ſaw the conſtable enter, with a train of priſoners at his heels, than he ſaluted him as follows: "So! Mr. Conſtable, you are a diligent man—What den of rogues have you been ſcouring?" Then looking at us, who appeared very much dejected, he continued, "Aye, aye, thieves I ſee—old offenders—O your humble ſervant, Mrs. Harridan! I ſuppoſe theſe fellows have been taken robbing your houſe—yes, yes, here's an old acquaintance of mine—you have uſed expedition (ſaid he to me) in returning from tranſportation; but we ſhall ſave you the trouble for the future—the ſurgeons will fetch you from your next tranſportation, at their expence."—I aſſured his worſhip he was miſtaken in me, for he had never ſeen me in his life before.—To this declaration he replied, "How, you impudent raſcal, dare you to ſay ſo to my face?

face? Do you think I am to be imposed upon by that northern accent which you have assumed? but it shan't avail you,—you shall find me too far north for you.—Here, clerk, write this fellow's *mittimus*.—His name is Patrick Gahagan."—Here Mr. Jackson interposed, and told him I was a Scotchman, lately come to town, descended of a good family, and that my name was Random.—The justice looked upon this assertion as an outrage upon his memory, on which he valued himself much; and strutting up to Jackson, with a fierce countenance, put his hands in his sides, and said, "Who are you, Sir?—Do you give me the lie?—Take notice, gentlemen, here's a fellow who affronts me upon the bench, but I'll lay you fast, sirrah I will——for, notwithstanding your laced jacket, I believe you are a notorious felon."—My friend was so much abashed at this menace, which was thundered out with great vociferation, that he changed colour, and remained speechless.—This confusion his worship took for a symptom of guilt, and to complete his discovery, continued his threats—"Now, I am convinced you are a thief,—your face discovers it,—you tremble all over—your conscience won't lie still—you'll be hang'd; sirrah, (raising his voice) you'll be hang'd; and happy had it been for the world, as well as your own miserable soul, if you had been detected and cut off in the beginning of your career.—Come hither, clerk, and take this man's confession."—I was in an agony of consternation, when the constable going into another room with his worship, acquainted him with the truth of the story: which having learned, he returned with a smiling countenance, and addressing himself to us all, said, it was always his way to terrify young people, when they came before him, that his threats might make a strong impression on their minds, and deter them from engaging in scenes of riot and debauchery, which commonly ended before the judge.—Thus having cloaked his own want of discernment under the disguise of paternal care, we were dismissed; and I found myself as much lightened as if a mountain had been lifted off my breast.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVIII.

I carry my Qualification to the Navy Office—The Nature of it—The Behaviour of the S—t—y——Strap's concern for my Abſence—A Battle between him and a Blackſmith—The troubleſome Conſequence of it—His Harangue to me—His Friend the School-maſter recommends me to a French Apothecary, who entertains me as a Journeyman.

I Would willingly have gone home to ſleep, but was told by my companions, that we muſt deliver our letters of qualification at the Navy-Office before one o'clock; accordingly we went thither and gave them to the S—t—y, who opened and read them, and I was mightily pleaſed to find myſelf qualified for a ſecond mate of a third rate. When he had ſtuck them all together on a file, one of our company aſked if there were any vacancies; to which interrogation he anſwered, No. Then I ventured to inquire if any ſhips were to be put in commiſſion ſoon—At which queſtion he ſurveyed me with a look of ineffable contempt, and puſhing us out of his office, locked the door without deigning us another word.—We went down ſtairs and confered together on our expectations, when I underſtood that each of them had been recommended to one or other of the commiſſioners; and each of them promiſed the firſt vacancy that ſhould fall; but that none of them relied ſolely upon that intereſt, without a preſent to the S—t—y, with whom ſome of the c————went ſnacks.—For which reaſon each of them had provided a ſmall purſe; and I was aſked what I propoſed to give?—This was a vexatious queſtion to me, who (far from being in a capacity to gratify a ravenous S—t—y) had not wherewithal to purchaſe a dinner.—I therefore anſwered, I had not yet determined what to give: and ſneaked off towards my own lodgings, curſing my fate all the way, and inveighing with much bitterneſs againſt the barbarity of my grandfather, and the ſordid avarice of my relations,

who

who left me a prey to contempt and indigence.—Full of these disagreeable reflections, I arrived at the house where I lodged, and relieved my landlord from great anxiety on my account; for this honest man believed I had met with some dismal accident, and that he should never see me again.—Strap, who had come to visit me in the morning, understanding I had been abroad all night, was almost distracted; and after having obtained leave of his master, had gone in quest of me, though he was even more ignorant of the town than I. Not being willing to inform my landlord of my adventure, I told him, I had met an acquaintance at Surgeon's-hall with whom I had spent the evening and night, but being very much infested by bugs, I had not slept much, and therefore intended to take a little repose; so saying, I went to bed, and desired to be awakened if Strap should happen to come while I should be asleep—I was accordingly roused by my friend himself, who entered my chamber about three o'clock in the afternoon: and presented a figure to my eyes, that I could scarce believe real.—In short, this affectionate shaver, setting out towards Surgeons'-hall, had inquired for me there to no purpose; from thence he found his way to the Navy-office, where he could hear no tidings of me, because I was unknown to every body then present; he afterwards went upon 'Change, in hopes of seeing me upon the Scotch walk; but without success. At last, being almost in despair of finding me, he resolved to ask every body he met in the street, if perchance any one could give him information about me; and actually put his resolution in practice, in spite of the scoffs, curses, and reproaches with which he was answered; until a blacksmith's 'prentice, seeing him stop a porter with a burden on his back, and hearing his question, for which he received a hearty curse, called to him, and asked if the person he inquired after was not a Scotchman?—Strap replied with great eagerness, "Yes, and had on a brown coat with long skirts."—"The same (said the blacksmith) I saw him pass by an hour ago."—"Did you so?
(cried

(cried Strap, rubbing his hands,) Odd! I am very glad of that—which way went he?"—"Towards Tyburn in a cart (said he;) if you make good speed, you may get thither time enough to see him hanged."—This piece of wit incensed my friend to such a degree, that he called the blacksmith scoundrel, and protested he would fight him for half a farthing—"No, no, (said the other stripping) I'll have none of your money,—you Scotchmen seldom carry any about you—but I'll fight you for love."—There was a ring immediately formed by the mob: and Strap finding he could not get off honourably without fighting, at the same time burning with resentment against his adversary, quitted his clothes to the care of the multitude, and the battle began with great violence on the side of Strap, who in a few minutes exhausted his breath and spirits on his patient antagonist, who sustained the assault with great coolness, till finding the barber quite spent, he returned the blows he had lent him with such interest, that Strap, after having received three falls on the hard stones, gave out, and allowed the blacksmith to be the better man. — The victory being thus decided, it was proposed to adjourn to a cellar hard by and drink friends.—But when my friend began to gather up his clothes, he perceived that some honest person or other had made free with his shirt, neckcloth, hat and wig, which were carried off; and probably his coat and waistcoat would have met with the same fate, had they been worth stealing. It was in vain for him to make a noise, which only yielded mirth to the spectators; he was fain to get off in this manner, which he accomplished with much difficulty, and appeared before me all besmeared with blood and dirt. —Notwithstanding this misfortune, such was his transport at finding me safe and sound, that he had almost stifled and stunk me to death with his embraces. ——After he had cleaned himself, and put on one of my shirts, and a woollen night cap; I recounted to him the particulars of my night's campaign, which filled him with admiration, and made him repeat with great energy an

obſervation which was often in his mouth, namely, "that ſurely London was the devil's drawing-room."—As neither of us had dined, he deſired me to get up, and the milk-woman coming round at that inſtant, he went down ſtairs and brought up a quart, with a penny brick, on which we made a comfortable meal. He then ſhared his money with me, which amounted to eighteen-pence, and left me, with an intention to borrow an old wig and hat of his friend the ſchool-maſter.

He was no ſooner gone, than I began to conſider my ſituation with great uneaſineſs, and revolved all the ſchemes my imagination could ſuggeſt, in order to chooſe and purſue ſome one that would procure me bread; for it is impoſſible to expreſs the pangs I felt, when I reflected on the miſerable dependence in which I lived, at the expence of a poor barber's boy.———My pride took the alarm, and having no hopes of ſucceeding at the Navy-office, I came to a reſolution of enliſting in the foot guards next day, be the event what it would. This extravagant deſign, by flattering my diſpoſition, gave me great ſatiſfaction; and I was charging the enemy at the head of my own regiment, when Strap's return interrupted my reverie.—The ſchool-maſter had made him a preſent of the tye-wig which he wore when I was introduced to him, together with an old hat, whoſe brims would have overſhadowed a Coloſſus.—Though Strap had ventured to wear them in the duſk he did not chooſe to entertain the mob by day; therefore went to work immediately and reduced them both to a moderate ſize. While he was employed in this office, he addreſſed me thus: "To be ſure, Mr. Random, you are born a gentleman, and have a great deal of learning—and indeed look like a gentleman, for as to perſon you may hold up your head with the beſt of them.—On the other hand, I am a poor, but honeſt cobler's ſon—my mother was as induſtrious a woman, as ever broke bread, till ſuch time as ſhe took to drinking, which you very well know—but every body has failings—*humanum eſt errare.*—Now for myſelf, I am a poor journeyman barber, tolerably well
made

made, and underſtand ſome Latin, and have a ſmattering of Greek—but what of that? perhaps I might alſo ſay that I know a little of the world—but that is to no purpoſe—though you be gentle, and I ſimple, it does not follow but that I who am ſimple may do a good office to you who are gentle. Now this is the caſe—my kinſman the ſchool-maſter—perhaps you did not know how nearly he is related to me—I'll ſatisfy you in that preſently—his mother and my grandmother's ſiſter's nephew—no, that's not it—my grandfather's brother's daughter—rabbit it? I have forgot the degree, but this I know, he and I are couſin's ſeven times removed."—My impatience to know the good office he had done me, got the better of my temper, and I interrupted him in this place, with, "D——n your relation and pedigree.——if the ſchool-maſter or you can be of any advantage to me, why don't you tell me without all this preamble."—When I pronounced theſe words with ſome vehemence, Strap looked at me for ſome time with a grave countenance, and then went on: "Surely, our pedigree is not to be d—n'd, becauſe it is not ſo noble as your's. I am very ſorry to ſee ſuch an alteration in your temper of late—you was always fiery, but now you are grown as crabbed as old Periwincle, the drunken tinker, on whom you and I (God forgive us) played ſo many unlucky tricks, while we were at ſchool.——But I will no longer detain you in ſuſpence, becauſe (doubtleſs) nothing is more uneaſy than doubt——*dubio procul dubio nil dubius*——My friend, or relation, or which you will, or both, the ſchool-maſter, being informed of the regard I have for you—for you may be ſure, I did not fail to let him know your good qualities—by the bye, he [illegible] undertaken to teach you the pronunciation of the Engliſh tongue, without which (he ſays) you will be unfit for buſineſs in this country——I ſay my relation has ſpoke in your behalf to a French apothecary who wants a journeyman: and on his recommendation, you may have fifteen pounds *per* year, bed and board, whenever you pleaſe."——I was too much intereſted in this piece of

news to entertain it with indifference; but jumping up, insisted on Strap's immediately accompanying me to the house of his friend, that I might not lose this opportunity through the least delay and neglect on my part.—We were informed that the school-master was in company at a public-house in the neighbourhood, whither we repaired and found him drinking with the very individual apothecary in question. When he was called to the door at our desire, and observed my impatience, he broke out in his usual term of admiration: "O C——st! I suppose when you heard of this offer, you did not take leisure enough to come down stairs, but leapt out of the window; did you overturn no porter nor oyster-woman in your way!———It is a mercy of God you did not knock your brains out against some post in your career. O' my conscience! I believe had I been in the inmost recesses of my habitation——the very *penetralia*,—even in bed with my wife; your eagerness would have surmounted bolts, bars, decency, and every thing. The den of Cacus, or *Sanctum Sanctorum*, could not have hid me from you. But come along, the gentleman of whom I spoke is in the house, I will present you to him forthwith."——When I entered the room, I perceived four or five people smoaking, one of whom the school-master accosted thus: "Mr. Lavement, here's the young man of whom I spoke to you."——The apothecary, who was a little old withered man, with a forehead about an inch high, a nose turned up at the end, large cheek bones that helped to form a pit for his little grey eyes, a great bag of loose skin hanging down on each side in wrinkles like the alforjas of a baboon; and a mouth so accustomed to that contraction which produces grinning, that he could not pronounce a syllable without discovering the remains of his teeth, which consisted of four yellow fangs, not improperly, by anatomists, called *canine*.——This person (I say) after having eyed me some time, said "Oho, 'tis ver well Monf. Concordance; young man, you are ver welcome, take one coup of bierre——and come to mine house to morrow morning; M. Concordance

dance vil shew you de way."—Upon this I made my bow, and, as I went out of the room, could hear him say, *Ma foy! Ce'est un beau garcon, C'est un galliard*——As I had by my own application, while I served Crab, acquired the French tongue well enough to read authors written in that language, and understand any thing that occurred in conversation, I determined to pretend ignorance to my new master, that he and his family, whom I supposed to be of the same country, not being on the reserve before me, might possibly discover something in discourse, which would either yield me amusement or advantage.——Next morning Mr. Concordance carried me to the apothecary's house, where the bargain was made, and orders given to provide an apartment for me immediately.—But before I entered upon business, the school-master recommended me to his taylor, who gave me credit for a suit of clothes, to be paid out of the first moiety of my wages, and they were begun upon that very day; he afterwards accommodated me with a new hat on the same terms; so that in a few days I hoped to make a very fashionable appearance.—In the mean time, Strap conveyed my baggage to the place allotted for me, which was a back room up two pair of stairs, furnished with a pallet for me to lie upon, a chair without a back, an earthen chamber-pot without a handle, a bottle by way of a candlestick, and a triangular piece of glass instead of a mirror, the rest of its ornaments having been lately removed to one of the garrets, for the convenience of the servant of an Irish captain, who lodged in the first floor.

CHAP. XIX.

The Characters of Mr. Lavement, his Wife and Daughter—Some Anecdotes of the Family — The Mother and Daughter rivals—I am guilty of a Mistake that gives me present Satisfaction, but is attended with troublesome Consequences.

NEXT day, while I was at work in the shop, a bouncing damsel, well dressed, came in, on pretence

of finding a vial for some use or other: and taking an opportunity, when she thought I did not mind her, of observing me narrowly went away with a silent look of disdain.—I easily guessed her sentiments, and my pride took the resolution of entertaining the same indifference and neglect towards her.—At dinner, the maids, with whom I dined in the kitchen, gave me to understand that this was my master's only daughter, who would have a very handsome fortune, on account of which, and her beauty, a great many young gentlemen made their addresses to her—that she had been twice on the brink of marriage, but disappointed by the stinginess of her father, who refused to part with a shilling to promote the match—for which reason the young lady did not behave to her father with all the filial veneration that might be expected: In particular, she harboured the most perfect hatred for his countrymen, in which disposition she resembled her mother, who was an English woman; and, by the hints they dropp'd, I learned the grey mare was the better horse—that she was a matron of high spirit, which was often manifested at the expence of her dependents, that she loved diversions: and looked upon Miss as her rival in all parties; which was indeed the true cause of her disappointments; for, had the mother been hearty in her interest, the father would not have ventured to refuse her demands.—Over and above this intelligence, I, of myself, soon made more discoveries; Mr. Lavement's significant grins at his wife, while she looked another way, convinced me that he was not at all content with his lot: and his behaviour in presence of the captain, made me believe his chief torment was jealousy.—As for my own part, I was considered in no other light than that of a menial servant, and had been already six days in the house, without being honoured with one word, from either mother or daughter, the latter (as I understood from the maids) having at table one day expressed some surprise that her papa should entertain such an aukward mean looking journeyman.—I was nettled at this piece of information, and next Sunday

day (it being my turn to take my diverſion) dreſſed myſelf in my new clothes to the greateſt advantage, and, vanity apart, made no contemptible figure.

After having ſpent moſt part of the day in company with Strap and ſome of his acquaintance, I came home in the afternoon, and was let in by Miſs, who, not knowing me, dropt a low curtſy as I advanced, which I returned with a profound bow, and ſhut the door.—By the time I had turned about, ſhe had perceived her miſtake, and changed colour, but did not withdraw. The paſſage being narrow, I could not get away without joſtling her; ſo I was forced to remain where I was, with my eyes fixed on the ground, and my face glowing with bluſhes.—At length her vanity coming to her aſſiſtance, ſhe went away tittering, and I could hear her pronounce the word "Creature." From this day forward, ſhe came into the ſhop fifty times every day, upon various pretences, and put in practice ſo many ridiculous airs, that I could eaſily perceive her opinion of me was changed, and that ſhe did not think me altogether an unworthy conqueſt.—But my heart was ſo ſteeled againſt her charms, by pride and reſentment, which were the two chief ingredients in my diſpoſition, that I remained inſenſible to all her arts; and, notwithſtanding ſome advances ſhe made, could not be prevailed upon to yield her the leaſt attention.—This neglect ſoon baniſhed all the favourable impreſſions ſhe felt for me, and the rage of a ſlighted woman took place in her heart; this ſhe manifeſted not only in all the ſuggeſtions her malice could invent to my prejudice with her father, but alſo in procuring for me ſuch ſervile employments as, ſhe hoped, would ſufficiently humble my ſpirit. One day in particular, ſhe ordered me to bruſh my maſter's coat, but I refuſing, a ſmart dialogue enſued, which ended in her burſting into tears of rage: when her mother interpoſing, and examining into the merits of the cauſe, determined it in my favour; and this good office I owed not to any eſteem or conſideration ſhe had for me, but ſolely to the deſire of mortifying her daughter, who on this occaſion obſerved that

that let people be never ſo much in the right, there were ſome folks who would never do them juſtice; but to be ſure they had their reaſons for it, which ſome people were not ignorant of, although they deſpiſed their little arts.—This inſinuation of ſome people and ſome folks, put me upon obſerving the behaviour of my miſtreſs more narrowly for the future; and it was not long before I had reaſon to believe that ſhe looked upon her daughter as a rival in the affections of Captain O'Donnell, who lodged in the houſe.—In the mean time my induſtry and knowledge gained me the good will of my maſter, who would often ſay in French, "*Mardy! c'eſt un bon garcon.*" He had a great deal of buſineſs; but, as he was moſtly employed among his fellow refugees, his profits were ſmall.—However, his expence for medicines was not great, for he was the moſt expert man at a ſuccedaneum, of any apothecary in London, ſo that I have been ſometimes amazed to ſee him, without the leaſt heſitation, make up a phyſician's preſcription, though he had not in his ſhop one medicine mentioned in it.—Oyſter-ſhells he could convert into crab's eyes; common oil into oil of ſweet almonds; ſyrup of ſugar into balſamic ſyrup; Thames water into aqua cinnamoni; turpentine into capivi; and an hundred more coſtly preparations were produced in an inſtant, from the cheapeſt and coarſeſt drugs of the *materia medica.* And when any common thing was ordered for a patient, he always took care to diſguiſe it in colour or taſte, or both, in ſuch a manner, as that it could not poſſibly be known.—For which purpoſe cochineal, and oil of cloves were of great ſervice. Among many noſtrums which he poſſeſſed, there was one for the venereal diſeaſe, that brought him a good deal of money; and this he concealed ſo artfully from me, that I could never learn its compoſition. But during the eight months I ſtayed in his ſervice, he was ſo unfortunate in the uſe it, that three parts in four of thoſe who took it were obliged to confirm the cure by a ſalivation, under the direction of another doctor.—This bad ſucceſs, in all appearance, attached him the

more

more to his ſpecific; and, before I left him, I may venture to ſay, he would have ſooner renounced the Trinity (notwithſtanding his being a good Hugonot) than his confidence in the never-failing power of this remedy.—Mr. Lavement had attempted more than once to introduce a vegetable diet into his family, by launching out into the praiſe of roots and greens, and decrying the uſe of fleſh, both as a phyſician and philoſopher; but all his rhetoric could not make one proſelyte to his opinion, and even the wife of his boſom declared againſt the propoſal. Whether it was owing to the little regard ſhe paid to her huſband's admonition in this particular, or to the natural warmth of her conſtitution, I know not; but this lady's paſſions became every day more and more violent, till at laſt ſhe looked upon decency as an unneceſſary reſtraint; and one afternoon, when her huſband was abroad, and her daughter gone to viſit, ordered me to call a hackney coach, in which ſhe and the captain drove towards Covent-garden.—Miſs came home in the evening, and ſupping at her uſual hour, went to bed. About eleven o'clock my maſter entered, and aſked if his wife was gone to ſleep. Upon which I told him, my miſtreſs went out in the afternoon, and was not yet returned.—This was like a clap of thunder to the poor apothecary, who, ſtarting back, cried, "*Mort de ma vie!* vat you tell a me?—My wife not at home!—At that inſtant a patient's ſervant arrived with a preſcription for a draught, which my maſter taking, went into the ſhop to make it up with his own hand.—While he rubbed the ingredients in a glaſs mortar, he enquired of me, whether or no his wife went out alone; and no ſooner heard that ſhe was in company with the captain, than with one blow he ſplit the mortar into a thouſand pieces, and, grinning like the head of a baſs viol, exclaimed, "*Ah Traitreſſe!*" It would have been impoſſible for me to have preſerved my gravity a minute longer, when I was happily relieved by a rap at the door, which I opened, and perceived my miſtreſs coming out of the coach; ſhe flounced immediately into the ſhop, and addreſſed her huſband thus: "I ſuppoſe you thought

thought I was loſt, my dear—Captain O'Donnell has been ſo good as to treat me with a play,"—" Play—play (replied he) Oho! yes by gar, I believe ver prettie play." " Bleſs me (ſaid ſhe) what's the matter?"—" Vat de matter? (cried he, forgetting all his former complaiſance) by gar, you be one damn'd dog's wife—*ventre bleu!* me vill ſhow you vat it is to put one horn upon mine head. Pardieu! le Capitaine O'Donnel be one."—Here the captain, who had been all the while at the door diſcharging the coach, entered, and ſaid, with a terrible voice, " D—me! what am I?"—Mr. Lavement changing his tone, immediately ſaluted him with, " *Oh, ſerviteur, ſieur le capitaine, vous etes un gallant homme—ma femme eſt forte oblige.*" Then turning about towards me, pronounced, with a low voice, " *Et diablement obligeante, ſans doute.*"—" Harkee, Mr. Lavement, (ſaid the captain) I am a man of honor, and I believe you are too much of a gentleman to be offended at the civility I ſhew your wife."——This declaration had ſuch an effect on the apothecary, that he reſumed all the politeſſe of a Frenchman; and with the utmoſt proſtration of compliment aſſured the captain that he was perfectly well ſatisfied with the honor he had done his wife.—Matters being thus compoſed, every body went to reſt.—Next day I perceived through a glaſs door that opened from the ſhop into the parlour, the captain talking earneſtly to Miſs, who heard him with a look that expreſſed anger mingled with ſcorn; which however he at laſt found means to mollify, and ſealed his reconciliation with a kiſs.——This circumſtance ſoon convinced me of the occaſion of the quarrel; but notwithſtanding all my vigilance, I could never diſcover any other commerce between them.—In the mean while, I had reaſon to believe I had inſpired one of the maids with tender ſentiments for me; and one night when I thought every other perſon in the houſe aſleep, I took the opportunity of going to reap the fruits of my conqueſt, her bedfellow having the day before gone to Richmond to viſit her parents.—Accordingly I got up, and (naked as I was) explored my way in the dark, to the

the garret where she lay. was ravished to find the door open, and moved softly to her bed-side, transported with the hope of completing my wishes.—But what horrors of jealousy and disappointment did I feel, when I found her asleep, fast locked up in the arms of a man, whom I easily guessed to be no other than the captain's servant! I was upon the point of doing some rash thing, when the noise of a rat scratching behind the wainscot put me to flight, and I was fain to get back to my own bed in safety.—Whether this alarm had disordered my mind, or that I was led astray by the power of destiny, I know not; but instead of turning to the left hand, when I descended to the second story, I pursued the contrary course, and mistook the young lady's bed-chamber for my own. I did not perceive my mistake before I had run against the bed-posts; and then it was not in my power to retreat undiscovered; for the nymph being awake, felt my approach, and with a soft voice, bade me make less noise, lest the Scotch booby in the next room should over-hear us. This hint was sufficient to inform me of the nature of the assignation; and as my passions, at any time high, were then in a state of exaltation, I resolved to profit by my good fortune. Without any more ceremony therefore, I made bold to slip into bed to this charmer, who gave me as favourable a reception as I could desire.—Our conversation was very sparing on my part, but she upbraided the person whom I represented with his jealousy of me, whom she handled so roughly, that my resentment had well nigh occasioned a discovery more than once; but I was consoled for her hatred of me by the revenge I enjoyed in understanding from her own mouth, that it was now high time to save her reputation by matrimony; for she had reason to fear she could not much longer conceal the effect of their mutual intercourse. While I was meditating an answer to this proposal, I heard a noise in my room, like something heavy falling down upon the floor: upon which I started up, and creeping to the door of my chamber, observed by moon light the shadow of a man groping his way out; so I retired

to one side to let him pass ... him go down stairs as expeditiously as he could.—It was an easy matter to divine that this was the captain, who having over-slept himself, had got up at last to keep his assignation: and finding my door open, had entered my apartment instead of that of his mistress, where I supplied his place.—But finding his mistake, by falling over my chair, he was afraid the noise might alarm the family, and for that reason made off, delaying the gratification of his desires till another opportunity.—By this time, I was satisfied; and instead of returning to the place from whence I came, retreated to my own castle, which I fortified by bolting the door, and in the congratulation of my own happiness fell asleep.—But the truth of this adventure could not be long concealed from my young mistress, who next day came to an explanation with the captain, upon his lamenting his last night's disappointment, and begging pardon for the noise he had made.—Their mutual chagrin, when they came to the knowledge of what had happened, may be easily conjectured, though each had a peculiar grief unfelt by the other; for, she was conscious of not only having betrayed to me the secrets of her commerce with him; but also of having incensed me by the freedoms she had taken with my name, beyond a hope of reconciliation.—On the other hand, his jealousy suggested, that her sorrow was all artifice; and that I had supplied his place with her own privity and consent.—That such was the situation of their thoughts will appear in the sequel—for, that very day she came into the shop where I was alone, and fixing her eyes, swimming in tears, upon me, sighed most piteously. But I was proof against her distress, by recollecting the epithets with which she had honoured me the night before; and believing that the good reception I enjoyed was destined for another; therefore I took no notice of her affliction; and she had the mortification to find her disdain returned four-fold.—However, from thence forward she thought proper to use me with more complaisance than usual, knowing that it was in my power at any time to publish her shame. By

these means my life became much more agreeable (though I never could prevail upon myſelf to repeat my nocturnal viſit) and as I every day improved in my knowledge of the town, I ſhook off my aukward air by degrees, and acquired a character of a polite journeyman apothecary.

CHAP. XX.

I am aſſaulted and dangerouſly wounded—Suſpect O'Donnell, and am confirmed in my Opinion—Concert a Scheme of Revenge, and put it in Execution—OD'onnell robs his own Servant, and diſappears—I make my Addreſſes to a Lady, and am miraculouſly delivered from her Snare.

ONE night about twelve o'Clock, as I returned from viſiting a patient at Chelſea, I received a blow on my head from an unſeen hand, that ſtretched me ſenſeleſs on the ground; and was left for dead, with three ſtabs of a ſword in my body. The groans I uttered when I recovered the uſe of my reaſon, alarmed the people of a ſolitary ale-houſe, that ſtood near the ſpot where I lay, and they were humane enough to take me in, and ſend for a ſurgeon, who dreſſed my wounds, and aſſured me they were not mortal. One of them penetrated through the ſkin and muſcles of one ſide of the belly, in ſuch a manner, that (doubtleſs) the aſſaſſin imagined he had run me through the entrails.—The ſecond ſlanted along one of my ribs; and the laſt, which was intended for the finiſhing ſtroke, having been directed to my heart, the ſword ſnapt upon my breaſt-bone, and the point remained ſticking in the ſkin.—When I reflected upon this event, I could not perſuade myſelf that I had been aſſaulted by a common footpad: becauſe it is not uſual for ſuch people to murder thoſe they rob, eſpecially when they meet with no reſiſtance; and I found my money and every thing elſe about me (but my carcaſe) ſafe. I concluded, therefore, that I muſt either have been miſtaken for another, or obliged to the private reſentment of ſome ſecret enemy for what had happened; and as I could remember

nobody who had the leaſt cauſe of complaint againſt me, except captain O'Donnell and my maſter's daughter, my ſuſpicion ſettled upon them, though I took care to conceal it, that I might the ſooner arrive at confirmation.—With this view I went home in a chair about ten o'clock in the morning : and as the chairman ſupported me into the houſe, met the captain in the paſſage, who no ſooner ſaw me, than he ſtarted back, and gave evident ſigns of guilty confuſion, which he would have accounted for from the ſurpriſe occaſioned by ſeeing me in ſuch a condition.—My maſter having heard my ſtory, condoled me with a good deal of ſympathy ; and when he underſtood my wounds were not dangerous, ordered me to be carried up ſtairs to bed : though not without ſome oppoſition from his wife, who was of opinion, it would be better for me to go to an hoſpital, where I ſhould be more carefully attended.—My meditation was employed in concerting with myſelf ſome method of revenge againſt ſquire O'Donnell and his inamorata, whom I looked upon as the authors of my misfortune, when Miſs (who was not at home at my arrival) entered my chamber ; and ſaying ſhe was ſorry for the accident that had befallen me, aſked if I ſuſpected any one to be the aſſaſſin ; Upon which I fixed my eyes ſtedfaſtly upon her, and anſwered, " Yes."—She diſcovered no ſymptom of confuſion ; but replied haſtily, " If that be the caſe, why don't you take out a warrant to have him apprehended ? It will coſt but a trifle—if you have no money, I'll lend you."—This frankneſs not only cured me of my ſuſpicion with reſpect to her ; but even ſtaggered my belief with regard to the captain, of whoſe guilt I reſolved to have further proof, before I ſhould enterpriſe any thing in the way of revenge.—I thanked her kindly for her generous offer ; which however I had no occaſion to accept, being determined to do nothing raſhly. For though I could plainly perceive the perſon who attacked me to be a ſoldier, whoſe face I thought was familiar to me, I could not ſwear with a ſafe conſcience to any particular man ; and granting I could, my proſecution of him

would

would not much avail.—This uncertainty I pretended, left the captain, hearing from her that I knew the person who wounded me, might think proper to withdraw before I could be in a condition to requite him.—In two days I was up, and able to do a little business; so that Mr. Lavement made shift to carry on his practice, without hiring another journeyman in my room.—The first thing I attempted towards a certain discovery of my secret enemy, was to get into O'Donnell's apartment, while he was abroad in an undress, and examine his sword, the point of which being broke off, I applied the fragment that was found sticking in my body, and found it answered the fractured part exactly.—There was no room left for doubt; and all that remained was to fix upon a scheme of revenge, which almost solely engrossed my thoughts during the space of eight nights and days.—Sometimes I was tempted to fall upon him in the same manner as he had practised upon me, and kill him outright. But this assault my honour opposed as a piece of barbarous cowardice, in which he was not to be imitated. At other times I entertained thoughts of demanding satisfaction in an honourable way; but was diverted from this undertaking by considering the uncertainty of the event, and the nature of the injury he had done me, which did not entitle him to such easy terms.—At last I determined to pursue a middle course; and actually put my design in execution after this manner.—Having secured the assistance of Strap and two of his acquaintance whom he could depend upon, we provided ourselves with disguises, and I caused the following letter to be delivered to him by one of our associates in livery, one Sunday evening:

"SIR,

"IF I may be allowed to judge from appearance, it will not be disagreeable to you to hear that my husband is gone to Bagshot to visit a patient, and will not return till to-morrow night; so that if you have any thing to propose to me (as your behaviour on many oc-

 casions,

casions has seemed to insinuate) you will do well to embrace the present opportunity of seeing

Your's, &c.

This letter was signed with the name of an apothecary's wife, who lived in Chelsea, of whom I had heard O'Donnell was an admirer. Every thing succeeded to our wish. The amorous hero hastened towards the place of assignation, and was encountered by us in the very place where he had assaulted me. We rushed upon him all at once, secured his sword, stripped off his cloathes even to the skin, which we scourged with nettles till he was blistered from head to foot, notwithstanding all the eloquence of his tears and supplications. When I was satisfied with the stripes I had bestowed, we carried off his cloathes, which we hid in a hedge near the place, and left him stark naked, to find his way home in the best manner he could, while I took care to be there before him. I afterwards understood that in his way to the lodgings of a friend, who lived in the skirts of the town, he was picked up by the watch, who carried him to the round-house, from whence he sent for clothes to his lodgings: and next morning arrived at the door in a chair, wrapt up in a blanket he had borrowed; for his body was so sore and swelled, that he could not bear to be confined in his wearing apparel.—He was treated with the utmost tenderness by my mistress and her daughter, who vied with each other in their care and attendance of him; but Lavement himself could not forbear expressing his joy, by several malicious grins, while he ordered me to prepare an unguent for his sores. As to myself, nobody can doubt my gratification, when I had every day an opportunity of seeing my revenge protracted on the body of my adversary, by the ulcers, of which I had been the cause; and, indeed, I not only enjoyed the satisfaction of having flayed him alive, but another also which I had not foreseen. The story of his being attacked and stripped in such a place having been inserted in the news gave information to those who found his clothes next

day

day, whither to bring them; and, accordingly he retrieved every thing he had loſt, except a few letters, among which was that I had writ to him in the name of the apothecary's wife. — This and the others which (it ſeems) were all on the ſubject of love (for this Hibernian hero was one of thoſe people who are called fortune-hunters) fell into the hands of a certain female author, famous for the ſcandal ſhe has publiſhed; who, after having embelliſhed them with ſome ornaments of her own invention, gave them to the town in print.—I was very much ſhocked on reflecting, that I might poſſibly be the occaſion of a whole family's unhappineſs on account of the letter I had written; but was eaſed of that apprehenſion, when I underſtood that the Chelſea apothecary had commenced a law-ſuit againſt the printer for defamation; and looked upon the whole as a piece of forgery, committed by the author, who had diſappeared. But whatever might be his opinion of the matter, our two ladies ſeemed to entertain a different idea of it; for, as ſoon as the pamphlet appeared, I could perceive their care of their patient conſiderably diminiſh, until at laſt it ended in total neglect. It was impoſſible for him to be ignorant of this change, any more than of the occaſion of it; but as he was conſcious to himſelf of having deſerved worſe than contempt at their hands, he was glad to come off ſo cheaply, and contented himſelf with muttering curſes and threats againſt the apothecary, who (as he imagined) having got an inkling of the appointment with his wife, had taken revenge of him in the manner deſcribed. By the time he had got a new ſcarfskin, his character was become ſo notorious, that he thought it high time for him to decamp; and his retreat he performed one night, without beat of drum, after having robbed his own ſervant of every thing that belonged to him, except the clothes he had on his back.—A few days after he diſappeared, Mr. Lavement, for his own ſecurity, took into cuſtody a large old trunk, which he had left; and as it was very heavy, made no queſtion that the contents were ſufficient to indemnify him for what O'Donnell owed in

in lodging.—But, a month being elapſed without hearing any tidings of this adventurer; and my maſter being impatient to know what the trunk contained; he ordered me to break it open in his preſence, which taſk I performed with the peſtle of our great mortar, and diſcovered, to his inexpreſſible aſtoniſhment and mortification, a heap of ſtones.

About this time, my friend Strap informed me of an offer he had to go abroad with a gentleman, in quality of *valet de chambre*, and at the ſame time aſſured me, that whatever advantage he might propoſe to himſelf from this proſpect, he could not bear the thoughts of parting from me; ſo much was he attached to my fortune. In ſpite of all the obligations I owed to this poor honeſt fellow, ingratitude is ſo natural to the heart of man, that I began to be tired of his acquaintance; and now that I had contracted other friendſhips, which appeared more creditable, was even aſhamed to ſee a journeyman barber enquiring after me, with the familiary of a companion. I, therefore, on pretence of conſulting his welfare, inſiſted upon his accepting the propoſal, which he at laſt determined to embrace with great reluctance, and in a few days took his leave of me, ſhedding a flood of tears, which I could not behold without emotion. I now began to look upon myſelf as a gentleman in reality; learned to dance of a Frenchman whom I had cured of a faſhionable diſtemper; frequented plays during the holidays; became the oracle of an ale-houſe, where every diſpute was referred to my deciſion; and at length contracted an acquaintance with a young lady, who found means to make a conqueſt of my heart, and upon whom I prevailed, after much attendance and ſolicitation, to give me a promiſe of marriage.—As this beautiful creature paſſed for a rich heireſs, I bleſſed my good fortune, and was actually on the point of crowning all my wiſhes by matrimony; when one morning, I went to her lodgings, and her maid being abroad, took the privilege of a bridegroom to enter her chamber, where to my utter confuſion, I found her in bed with a man.

man. Heaven gave me patience and presence of mind enough to withdraw immediately; and I thanked my stars a thousand times for the happy discovery, by which I resolved to profit so much, as to abandon all thoughts of marriage for the future.

CHAP. XXI.

Squire Gawky comes to lodge with my Master—Is involved in a troublesome Affair, out of which he is extricated by me—He marries my Master's Daughter—They conspire against me—I am found guilty of Theft—Discharged—Deserted by my Friends—I hire a Room in St. Giles's—where by Accident, I find the Lady to whom I made my Addresses, in a miserable Condition—I relieve her.

WHILE I enjoyed myself at large in this temper of mind, Mr. Lavement let his first floor to my countryman and acquaintance, 'Squire Gawky, who by this time had got a lieutenantcy in the army, and such a martial ferocity in his appearance, that I was afraid he would remember what had happened between us in Scotland, and atone for his breach of appointment then, by his punctuality now; but whether he had actually forgot me, or was willing to make me believe so, he betrayed not the least symptom of recognition at sight of me, and I remained quite cured of my apprehension; though I had occasion not long after to be convinced, that howsoever his externals might be altered, he was at bottom the same individual Gawky whom I have already described. —For, coming home late one night from the house of a patient, I heard a noise in the street, and as I approached, perceived two gentlemen in custody of three watchmen. The prisoners, who were miserably disfigured with dirt, complained bitterly of the loss of their hats and wigs; and one of them, whom by his tongue I knew to be a Scotchman, lamented most piteously, offering a guinea for his liberty, which the watchman refused, alledging that one of his companions was wound-

ed grievously, and that he must stand to the consequence. My prejudice in favour of my native country was so strong, that I could not bear to see any body belonging to it in distress, and therefore, with one blow of my faithful cudgel, knocked down the watchman who had hold of the person for whom I was chiefly concerned.— He was no sooner disengaged, than he betook himself to his heels, and left me to maintain the dispute as I should think proper; and indeed I came off but scurvily, for before I could avail myself of my speed, I received a blow on the eye, from one of the other two, that had well nigh deprived me of the use of that organ; however, I made shift to get home, where I was informed of Captain Gawky's being robbed and abused by a company of footpads; and was ordered by my master to prepare an emollient clyster and paregoric draught, in order to allay and compose the ferment of his spirits, occasioned by the barbarous treatment he had undergone, while he took twelve ounces of blood from him immediately.— When I enquired into the particulars of this adventure, and understood from the servant that he came in just before me, without hat and wig, I made no scruple of believing him to be the person I had released, and was confirmed in my belief upon hearing his voice, to which (before that event) I had been so long a stranger. My eye being considerably swelled and inflamed, I could not reflect upon my enterprize without cursing my own folly, and even resolving to declare the truth of the whole story, in order to be revenged on the cowardly wretch for whom I had suffered: Accordingly, next day, after he had told, in presence of my master, his wife and daughter, who came to visit him, a thousand lies concerning the prowess he had shewn in making his escape, I ventured to explain the mystery, and calling in the evidence of my contused eye, upbraided him with cowardice and ingratitude. Gawky was so astonished at this discourse, that he could not answer one word; and the rest of the company stared at one another; till at length my mistress reprimanded me for my insolent behaviour

haviour, and threatened to turn me away for my preſumption.—Upon which, Gawky, (having recollected himſelf) obſerved, as the young man might have miſtaken another perſon for him, he could forgive his inſinuations, more eſpecially as he ſeemed to have ſuffered for his civility; but adviſed me to be more certain in my conjectures for the future, before I ventured to publiſh them to the prejudice of any man.—Miſs applauded the captain's generoſity in pardoning one who had ſo villainouſly aſperſed him, and I began to imagine her praiſe was not at all diſintereſted.—But the apothecary, who, perhaps, had more penetration or leſs partiality than his wife and daughter, differed from them in his ſentiments of the matter, and expreſſed himſelf to me in this manner: "Ah mon pauvre Roderique! you are more of de veracite dan of de prudence—bot mine vife and dater be diablement ſage, and Monſ. le capitaine un fanfaron, pardieu." This eulogium on his wife and daughter, though ſpoken ironically by him, was, nevertheleſs, literally juſt; by eſpouſing the cauſe of Gawky, the one obliged a valuable lodger, and the other acquired a huſband, at a juncture when one was abſolutely neceſſary; for, the young lady, finding the effects of her correſpondence with O'Donnell becoming plainer and plainer every day, inſinuated herſelf ſo artfully into the affection of this new lodger, that in leſs than a fortnight, on pretence of going to a play, they drove away together to the fleet, where they were coupled; from thence removed to a bagnio, where the marriage was conſummated; and in the morning came home, where they aſked her father's and mother's ble[illegible]g.—The prudent parents, notwithſtanding the prec[illegible]ation with which the match w[illegible] carried on, did not think fit to refuſe their approbation: for the apothecary was not ill pleaſed to find his daughter married to a young man of a good proſpect: who had not mentioned to him one ſyllable on the article of her dowry; and his wife was rejoiced at being rid of a rival in her gallants, and a ſpy upon her pleaſures. Nor was I without ſelf-enjoyment at this event, when I reflected upon

upon the revenge I had unwittingly taken upon my enemy, in making him a cuckold by anticipation.—But I little dreamed what a ſtorm of miſchief was brewing againſt me while I was thus indulging myſelf.—Whatever face Gawky put on the matter, my diſcovery of the adventure before related, and the reproaches I vented againſt him, had ſtung him to the ſoul, and cheriſhed the ſeeds of enmity ſo ſtrongly in his breaſt, that he, (it ſeems) imparted his indignation to his wife, who, being as deſirous as himſelf to compaſs the ruin of one who not only ſlighted her careſſes, but was able, on any occaſion to diſcover particulars not at all advantageous to her character, readily joined in a conſpiracy againſt me, which (had it taken effect as they expected) would infallibly have brought me to an ignominious death.

My maſter having ſeveral times miſſed large quantities of medicines, of which I could give no account, at laſt loſt all patience, and in plain terms taxed me with having embezzled them for my own uſe. As I could only oppoſe my ſingle aſſeveration to his ſuſpicion, he told me one day, " By gar, your vord not be give me de ſatisfaction—me find neceſſaire to chercher for my medicine, pardonnez moi—il faut chercher—me demand le clef of your coffre a cette heure."—Then raiſing his voice to conceal the fright he was in, leſt I ſhould make any oppoſition, he went on, " Oui, foutre, I charge you rendez le clef of your coffre—moi—ſi, moi qui vous parle."—I was fired with ſo much reſentment and diſdain at this accuſation, that I burſt into tears, which he took for a ſign of guilt; and pulling out my key, told him he might ſatisfy himſelf immediately, though he would not find it ſo eaſy to ſatisfy me for the injury my reputation had ſuffered from this unjuſt ſuſpicion.—He took the key and mounted up to my chamber, attended by the whole family; ſaying, " He bien, nous verrons—nous verrons."—But what was my horror and amazement, when opening my cheſt he pulled out an handful of the very things that were miſſing, and pronounced, " Ah, ah! vous etes bien venus—mardie, Monſ. Roderique,

rique, you be fort innocent."—I had not power to utter one word in my own vindication, but ſtood motionleſs and ſilent, while every body preſent made their reſpective remarks on what appeared againſt me.—The ſervants ſaid they were ſorry for my misfortune, and went away repeating, "Who would have thought it?" My miſtreſs took occaſion from this detection to rail againſt the practice of employing ſtrangers in general; and Mrs. Gawky, after having obſerved that ſhe never had a good opinion of my fidelity, propoſed to have me carried before the juſtice and committed to Newgate immediately. Her huſband was actually on the ſtairs in his way for a conſtable, when Mr. Lavement, knowing the coſt and trouble of a proſecution, to which he muſt bind himſelf, and at the ſame time dreading leſt ſome particulars of my confeſſion might affect his practice, called out, "Reſtez, mon fils! reſtez, it be veritablement one grand crime which dis pauvre diable have committed—bot peutetre de good God give him de penitence, and me vill not have upon mine head de blood of one ſinner."—The captain and his lady uſed all the chriſtian arguments their zeal could ſuggeſt, to prevail on the apothecary to purſue me to deſtruction, and repreſented the injuſtice he did to the community of which he was a member, in letting a villain eſcape, who would not fail of doing more miſchief in the world, when he ſhould reflect on his coming off ſo eaſily now:—but their eloquence made no impreſſion on my maſter, who turning to me, ſaid, "Go, miſerable, go from mine houſe, quick, quick,—and make reparation for your mauvaiſe actions."—By this time my indignation had rouſed me from the ſtupefaction in which I had hither remained, and I began in this manner, "Sir, appearances, I own, condemn me; but you are impoſed upon as much as I am abuſed—I have fallen a ſacrifice to the rancour of that ſcoundrel, (pointing to Gawky) who has found means to convey your goods hither, that the detection of them might blaſt my reputation, and accompliſh my deſtruction.—His hatred of me is owing to a

consciousness of his having wronged me in my own country; for which injury he in a cowardly manner refused me the satisfaction of a gentleman;—he knows, moreover, that I am no stranger to his dastardly behaviour in this town, which I have recounted before; and he is unwilling that such a testimony of his ingratitude and pusillanimity should live upon the earth; for this reason he is guilty of the most infernal malice to bring about my ruin.—And I am afraid, madam, (turning to Mrs. Gawky) you have too easily entered into the sentiments of your husband.—I have often found you my enemy; and am well acquainted with the occasion of your being so, which I don't at present think proper to declare; but I would not advise you for your own sake to drive me to extremity." This address enraged her so much, that with a face as red as scarlet, and the eyes of a fury, she strutted up to me, and putting her hands on her sides, spit in my face, saying, I was a scandalous villain, but she defied my malice; and that unless her papa would prosecute me, like a thief as I was, she would not stay another night under his roof. At the same time Gawky assuming a big look, told me he scorned what lies I could invent against him; but that if I pretended to asperse his wife, he would put me to death, by G—d. To this threat I answered, "I wish I could meet with thee in a desert, that I might have an opportunity of punishing thee for thy perfidy towards me, and rid the world of such a rascal—What hinders me this moment (said I, seizing an old bottle that stood by) from doing myself that justice?" I had no sooner armed myself in this manner, than Gawky and his father-in-law retired in such a hurry, that the one overturned the other, and they rolled together down stairs; while my mistress swooned away with fear, and her daughter asked if I intended to murder her. I gave her to understand that nothing was farther from my intention; that I would leave her to the stings of her own conscience; but was firmly resolved to slit her husband's nose, whenever fortune should offer a convenient opportunity. Then going

going down ſtairs I met Lavement coming up, trembling, with the peſtle in his hand, and Gawky behind, armed with his ſword, puſhing him forward, I demanded a parley, and having aſſured them of my pacific diſpoſition; Gawky exclaimed, "Ah! villain! you have killed my dear wife."—And the apothecary cried, "Ah coquin! vere is my ſhild?"—"The Lady (ſaid I) is above ſtairs, unhurt by me, and will a few months hence (I believe) reward your concern."—Here ſhe called to them, and deſired they would let the wretch go, and trouble themſelves no farther about him.—To which requeſt her father conſented, obſerving nevertheleſs, that my converſation was fort myſterieuſe. Finding it impoſſible to vindicate my innocence, I left the houſe immediately and went to the ſchoolmaſter, with an intention of clearing myſelf to him, and aſking his advice with regard to my future conduct; but, to my inexpreſſible vexation, was told he was gone to the country, where he would ſtay two or three days.—I returned with a deſign of conſulting ſome acquaintance I had acquired in my maſter's neighbourhood; but my ſtory had taken air, through the officiouſneſs of the ſervants, and not one of my friends would vouchſafe me a hearing.—Thus I found myſelf, by the iniquity of mankind, in a much more deplorable condition than ever: for though I had been formerly as poor, my reputation was without blemiſh, and my health unimpaired till now:—but at preſent my good name was loſt, my money gone, my friends were alienated, my body was infected by a diſtemper contracted in the courſe of an amour; and my faithful Strap, who alone could yield me pity and aſſiſtance, abſent I knew not where.

The firſt reſolutions I could take in this melancholy conjecture, was to remove my cloaths to the houſe of the perſon with whom I had formerly lodged: where I remained two days, in hopes of getting another place, by the intereſt of Mr. Concordance, to whom I made no doubt of being able to vindicate my character; but in this ſuppoſition I reckoned without my hoſt, for Lave-

ment took care to be before hand with me, and when I attempted to explain the whole affair to the schoolmaster, I found him so prepossessed against me, that he would scarce hear me to an end; but when I had finished my justification, shook his head, and beginning with his usual exclamation, "O Christ!" said, "That won't go down with me.—I am very sorry I should have the misfortune of being concerned in the affair, but however shall be more cautious for the future.—I will trust no man from henceforward—no, not my father who begat me—nor the brother who lay with me in my mother's womb—Should Daniel rise from the dead, I should think him an impostor; and were the genius of truth to appear, would question its veracity."—I told him, that one day it was possible he might be convinced of the injury I had suffered, and repent of his premature determination,—To which remark he answered, the proof of my innocence would make his bowels vibrate with joy; "but till that shall happen (continued he) I must beg to have no manner of connexion with you—my reputation is at stake—O my good God! I shall be looked upon as your accomplice and abettor—people will say Jonathan Wild was but a type of me—boys will hoot at me as I pass along; and the cinder-wenches belch forth reproaches wafted in a gale impregnated with gin—I shall be notorious, the very but of slander, and cloak of infamy."—I was not in an humour to relish the climax of expressions upon which this gentleman valued himself in all his discourses; but without any ceremony took my leave, cursed with every sentiment of horror, which my situation could suggest. I considered, however, in the intervals of my despondence, that I must in some shape suit my expences to my calamitous circumstances; and with that view hired an apartment in a garret near St. Giles's, at the rate of nine-pence *per* week:—In this place I resolved to perform my own cure, having first pawned three shirts to purchase medicines and support for the occasion.

One day when I sat in this solitary retreat, musing upon

upon the unhappineſs of my fate, I was alarmed by a groan that iſſued from a chamber contiguous to mine, into which I immediately ran, and found a woman ſtretched on a miſerable truckle bed, without any viſible ſigns of life. Having applied a ſmelling bottle to her noſe, the blood began to reviſit her cheeks, and ſhe opened her eyes; but, good heaven! what were the emotions of my ſoul, when I diſcovered her to be the ſame individual lady who had triumphed over my heart, and to whoſe fate I had almoſt been inſeparably joined! Her deplorable ſituation filled my breaſt with compaſſion, and every tender idea reviving my indignation, I flew into her embrace. She knew me immediately; and ſtraining me gently in her arms, ſhed a torrent of tears, which I could not help increaſing: at length, caſting a languiſhing look at me, ſhe pronounced with a feeble voice, "Dear Mr. Random, I do not deſerve this concern at your hands.—I am a vile creature, who had a baſe deſign upon your perſon—ſuffer me to expiate that and all my other crimes by a miſerable death, which will not fail to overtake me in a few hours."—I encouraged her as much as I could, told her I forgave all her intentions with regard to me; and that although my circumſtances were extremely low, I would ſhare my laſt farthing with her. In the mean time, begged to know the immediate cauſe of that fit from which ſhe had juſt recovered, and ſaid I would endeavour by my ſkill to prevent any more ſuch attacks.—She ſeemed very much affected with this expreſſion, took my hand and preſſed it to her lips, ſaying, "You are too generous; I wiſh I could live to expreſs my gratitude—but alas! I periſh for want."—Then ſhutting her eyes, ſhe relapſed into another ſwoon.—Such extremity of diſtreſs muſt have waken the moſt obdurate heart to ſympathy and compaſſion: What effect then muſt it have had on mine, that was naturally prone to every tender paſſion! I ran down ſtairs and ſent my landlady to a chymiſt's ſhop for ſome cinnamon water, which I, returning to this unfortunate creature's chamber, uſed all the means in my power to bring her

to herſelf: This aim with much difficulty I accompliſhed, and made her drink a glaſs of the cordial to recruit her ſpirits; then I prepared a little mulled red wine and a toaſt, which having taken, ſhe found herſelf thoroughly revived, and informed me, that ſhe had not taſted food for eight and forty hours before.—As I was impatient to know the occaſion and nature of her calamity, ſhe gave me to underſtand that ſhe was a woman of the town by profeſſion;—that in the courſe of her adventures, ſhe found herſelf dangerouſly infected with a diſtemper to which all of her claſs are particularly ſubject;—that her malady gaining ground every day, ſhe became loathſome to herſelf, and offenſive to others, when ſhe reſolved to retire to ſome obſcure corner, where ſhe might be cured with as little noiſe and expence as poſſible: that ſhe had accordingly choſen this place of retreat, and put herſelf into the hands of an advertiſing doctor, who, having fleeced her of all the money ſhe had, or could procure, left her three days ago in a worſe condition than that in which he found her;—that except the cloaths on her back, ſhe had pawned or ſold every thing that belonged to her, to ſatisfy that rapacious quack, and quiet the clamour of her landlady, who ſtill perſiſted in her threats to turn her out into the ſtreet.—After having moralized upon theſe particulars, I propoſed that ſhe ſhould lodge in the ſame room with me, an expedient that would ſave ſome money; and aſſured her I would undertake her cure as well as my own, during which ſhe ſhould partake of all the conveniences that I could afford to myſelf.—She embraced my offer with unfeigned acknowledgment; and I began to put it in practice immediately.—I found in her not only an agreeable companion, whoſe converſation greatly alleviated my chagrin, but alſo a careful nurſe, who ſerved me with the utmoſt fidelity, and affection. One day while I teſtified my ſurpriſe, that a woman of her beauty, good ſenſe, and education, (for ſhe had a large portion of each) could be reduced to ſuch an infamous and miſerable way of life as that of a proſtitute; ſhe anſwered with a ſigh, "Theſe

very

very advantages where the cauſe of my undoing,"— This remarkable reply inflamed my curioſity to ſuch a degree that I begged ſhe would favour me with the particulars of her ſtory, and ſhe complied in theſe words.

CHAP. XXII.

The Hiſtory of Miſs WILLIAMS.

MY father was an eminent merchant in the city, who having, in the courſe of trade, ſuffered very conſiderable loſſes, retired in his old age with his wife to a ſmall eſtate in the country, which he had purchaſed with the remains of his fortune. At that time I, being but eight years of age, was left in town for the convenience of education, boarded with an aunt, who was a rigid preſbyterian, and who confined me ſo cloſely to what ſhe called the duties of religion, that in time I grew weary of her doctrines, and by degrees conceived an averſion for the good books ſhe daily recommended to my peruſal. As I increaſed in age, and appeared with a perſon not diſagreeable, I contracted a good deal of acquaintance, among my own ſex, one of whom, after having lamented the reſtraint I was under, from the narrowneſs of my aunt's ſentiments, told me I muſt now throw off the prejudices of opinion imbibed under her influence and example, and learn to think for myſelf; for which purpoſe ſhe adviſed me to read Shafteſbury, Tindal, Hobbes, and all the books that are remarkable for their deviation from the old way of thinking, and by comparing one with another, I ſhould ſoon be able to form a ſyſtem of my own. I followed her advice; and whether it was owing to my prepoſſeſſion againſt what I had formerly read, or the clearneſs of argument in theſe my new inſtructors, I know not, but I ſtudied them with pleaſure, and in a ſhort time became a profeſſed free thinker. Proud of my new improvement, I argued in all companies, and that with ſuch ſucceſs, that I ſoon acquired the reputation of a philoſopher, and few people durſt undertake me in a diſpute.—I grew vain upon my good fortune, and at length pretended to make my aunt a proſelyte to my opinion; but ſhe no ſooner perceived my

drift, than taking the alarm, ſhe wrote to my father an account of my hereſy, and conjured him, as he tendered the good of my ſoul, to remove me immediately from the dangerous place where I had contracted ſuch ſinful principles. Accordingly my father ordered me into the country, where I arrived in the fifteenth year of my age, and by his command, gave him a detail of all the articles of my faith, which he did not find ſo unreaſonable as they had been repreſented.—Finding myſelf ſuddenly deprived of the company and pleaſures of the town, I grew melancholy, and it was ſome time before I could reliſh my ſituation.—But ſolitude became everyday more and more familiar to me, and I conſoled myſelf in my retreat with the enjoyment of a good library, at ſuch times as were not employed in the management of the family (for my mother had been dead three years) in viſiting, or ſome other party of rural diverſion.—Having more imagination than judgment, I addicted myſelf too much to poetry and romance; and, in ſhort, was looked upon as a very extraordinary perſon by every body in the country where I reſided.—I had one evening ſtrayed, with a book in my hand, into a wood that bordered on the high road, at a little diſtance from my father's houſe; when a certain drunken ſquire riding by, perceived me, and crying, "Z——ds! there's a charming creature! alighted in a moment, caught me in his arms, and treated me ſo rudely, that I ſhrieked as loud as I could, and in the mean time oppoſed his violence with all the ſtrength that rage and reſentment could inſpire.—During this ſtruggle, another horſeman came up, who ſeeing a lady ſo unworthily uſed, diſmounted, and flew to my aſſiſtance.—My raviſher, mad with diſappointment, or provoked with the reproaches of the other gentleman, quitted me, and running to his horſe, drew a piſtol from the ſaddle, and fired at my protector, who happily receiving no damage, went up, and with the butt end of his whip, laid him proſtrate on the ground, before he could uſe the other, which his antagoniſt immediately ſeized, and clapping to the ſquire's-breaſt, threatened to put him to death for his

cowardice

cowardice and treachery. In this dilemma I interpofed, and begged his life, which was granted to my requeft, after he had afked pardon, and fwore his intention was only to obtain a kifs.—However my defender thought proper to unload the other piftol, and throw away the flints, before he gave him his liberty.—This courteous ftranger conducted me home, where my father having learned the fignal fervice he had done me, loaded him with careffes, and infifted on his lodging that night at our houfe.—If the obligation he had conferred upon me juftly infpired me with fentiments of gratitude, his appearance and converfation feemed to entitle him to fomewhat more.—He was about the age of two and twenty, among the talleft of the middle fize; had chefnut-coloured hair, which he wore tied up in a ribband; a high polifhed forehead, a nofe inclining to the aqueline, lively blue eyes, red pouting lips, teeth as white as fnow, and a certain opennefs of countenance—but what need I defcribe any more particulars of his perfon? I hope you will do me the juftice to believe I do not flatter, when I fay he was the exact refemblance of you; and if I had not been well acquainted with his family and pedigree, I fhould have made no fcruple of concluding that you was his brother.—He fpoke little, and feemed to have no referve, for what he faid was ingenuous, fenfible, and uncommon.—In fhort, (faid fhe, burfting into tears) he was formed for the ruin of our fex. His behaviour was modeft and refpectful; but his looks were fo fignificant, that I could eafily obferve, he fecretly bleffed the occafion that introduced him to my acquaintance.—We learned from his difcourfe that he was the eldeft fon of a wealthy gentleman in the neighbourhood, to whofe name we were no ftrangers; that he had been to vifit an acquaintance in the country, from whofe houfe he was returning home, when my fhrieks brought him to my refcue.—All night long my imagination formed a thoufand ridiculous expectations. There was fo much of night-errantry in this gentleman's coming to the relief of a damfel in diftrefs, with whom he immediately became enamoured, that

that all I had read of love and chivalry recurred to my fancy, and I looked upon myſelf as a princeſs in ſome region of romance, who, being delivered from the power of a brutal giant or ſatyr by a generous Oroondates, was bound in gratitude, as well as led by inclination, to yield up my affections to him without reſerve. In vain did I endeavour to chaſtiſe theſe fooliſh conceits by reflections more reaſonable and ſevere. The amuſing images took full poſſeſſion of my mind, and my dreams repreſented my hero ſighing at my feet, in the language of a deſpairing lover.—Next morning after breakfaſt he took his leave, when my father begged the favour of further acquaintance with him; to which requeſt he replied by a compliment to him, and a look to me, ſo full of eloquence and tenderneſs, that my whole ſoul received the ſoft impreſſion.—In a ſhort time he repeated his viſit; and as a recital of the particular ſteps he purſued to ruin me would be too tedious and impertinent, let it ſuffice to ſay, he made it his buſineſs to inſinuate himſelf into my eſteem, by convincing me of his own good ſenſe, and at the ſame time flattering my underſtanding. This taſk he performed in the moſt artful manner, by ſeeming to contradict me often through miſapprehenſion, that I might have an opportunity of clearing myſelf, the more to my own honour. Having thus ſecured my good opinion, he began to give me ſome tokens of a particular paſſion, founded on a veneration for the qualities of my mind, and as an accidental ornament, admired the beauties of my perſon; till at length, being fully perſuaded of his conqueſt, he choſe a proper ſeaſon for the theme, and diſcloſed his love, in terms ſo ardent and ſincere, that it was impoſſible for me to diſguiſe the ſentiments of my heart, and he received my approbation with the moſt lively tranſport. After this mutual declaration we contrived to meet more frequently, in private interviews, where we enjoyed the converſation of one another, in all the elevation of fancy and impatience of hope that reciprocal adoration can inſpire.—He profeſſed his honourable intentions, of which I made no queſtion, lamented the avaricious

avaricious disposition of his father, who had destined him for the arms of another, and vowed eternal fidelity, with such an appearance of candour and devotion, that I became a dupe to his deceit, and in an evil hour crowned his eager desire with full possession.—Cursed be the day on which I gave away my innocence and peace for a momentary gratification, which has entailed upon me such misery and horror! cursed be my beauty that first attracted the attention of the seducer! cursed be my education, that by refining my sentiments, made my heart the more susceptible! cursed be my good sense that fixed me to one object, and taught me the preference I enjoyed was but my due! Had I been ugly, nobody would have tempted me; had I been ignorant, the charms of my person would no have atoned for the coarseness of my conversation; had I been giddy, my vanity would have divided my inclinations, and my ideas would have been so diffused, that I should never have listened to the enchantments of one alone.

But to return to my unfortunate story; we gave a loose to guilty pleasure, which for some months banished every other concern.—At last, by degrees, his visits became less frequent, and his behaviour less warm: I perceived his coldness, my heart took the alarm, my tears reproached him, and I insisted upon the performance of his promise to espouse me, that, whatever should happen, my reputation might be safe. He seemed to acquiesce in my proposal, and left me on pretence of finding a proper clergyman to unite us in the bands of wedlock.—But alas! the inconstant had no intention to return: I waited a whole week with the utmost impatience, sometimes doubting his honour, at other times inventing excuses for him, and condemning myself for harbouring the least suspicion of his faith.—At length, I understood from a gentleman who dined at our house, that this perfidious wretch was on the point of setting out for London with his bride, to buy clothes for their approaching nuptials.—This information distracted me! the more so, as I found myself some months gone with child, and reflected,

flected, that it would be impoſſible to conceal my diſgrace, which would not only ruin the character I had acquired in the country, but alſo bring the grey hairs of an indulgent parent to the grave. Rage took poſſeſſion of my ſoul; I denounced a thouſand imprecations, and formed as many ſchemes of revenge againſt the traitor who had undone me. Then my reſentment would ſubſide to ſilent ſorrow: I recalled the tranquillity I had loſt, I wept over my infatuation, and ſometimes a ray of hope would intervene, and for a moment cheer my drooping heart; I would revolve all the favourable circumſtances of his character, repeat the vows he made, aſcribe his abſence to the vigilance of a ſuſpicious father, who compelled him to a match his ſoul abhorred, and comfort myſelf with the expectation of ſeeing him before the thing ſhould be brought to any terms of agreement. But how vain was my imagination! The villain left me without remorſe, and in a few days the news of his marriage was ſpread all over the country.—My horror was then inconceivable; and had not the deſire of revenge diverted the reſolution, I ſhould infallibly have put an end to my miſerable life.—My father obſerved the ſymptoms of my deſpair; and though I have good reaſon to believe he gueſſed the cauſe, was at a great deal of pains to ſeem ignorant of my affliction, while he endeavoured with paternal fondneſs to alleviate my diſtreſs. I ſaw his concern, which increaſed my anguiſh, and raiſed my fury againſt the author of my calamity to an implacable degree. Having furniſhed myſelf with a little money, I made an elopement from this unhappy parent in the night-time, and about break of day arrived at a ſmall town, from whence a ſtage coach ſet out for London, in which I embarked, and next day alighted in town; the ſpirit of revenge having ſupported me all the way againſt every other reflection.—My firſt care was to hire a lodging, in which I kept myſelf very retired, having aſſumed a feigned name, that my character and ſituation might be the better concealed. It was not long before I found out the houſe of my raviſher, whither

I im-

I immediately repaired in a tranſport of rage, determined to act ſome deſperate deed for the ſatisfaction of my deſpair, though the hurry of my ſpirits would not permit me to concert or reſolve upon a particular plan. When I demanded admiſſion to Lothario (ſo let me call him) I was deſired to ſend up my name and buſineſs; but this I refuſed, telling the porter I had buſineſs for his maſter's private ear: Upon which I was conducted into a parlour until he ſhould be informed of my requeſt.—There I remained about a quarter of an hour, when a ſervant entered, and told me his maſter was engaged with company, and begged to be excuſed at that time. My temper could hold out no longer: I pulled a poniard from my boſom, where I had concealed it, and ruſhing out, flew up ſtairs like a fury, exclaiming, "Where is this perfidious villain! could I once plunge this dagger into his falſe heart, I ſhould then die ſatisfied." The noiſe I made alarmed not only the ſervants, but the company alſo, who hearing my threats, came forward to the ſtaircaſe to ſee what was the matter. I was ſeized, diſarmed, and with-held by two footmen; and in this ſituation felt the moſt exquiſite torture in beholding my undoer approach with his young wife. I could not endure the ſight, was deprived of my ſenſes, and fell into a ſevere fit, during which I know not how I was treated; but when I recovered the uſe of reflection, found myſelf on a bed in a paltry apartment, where I was attended by an old woman, who aſked a thouſand impertinent queſtions relating to my condition; and informed me that my behaviour had thrown the whole family into confuſion; that Lothario affirmed I was mad, and propoſed to have me ſent to Bedlam; but my lady perſuaded herſelf there was more in my conduct than he cared ſhould be known, and had taken to her bed on bare ſuſpicion, having firſt ordered that I ſhould be narrowly looked to. I heard all ſhe ſaid without making any other reply, than deſiring ſhe would do me the favour to call a chair; but this (ſhe told me) could not be done without her maſter's conſent, which, however, was eaſily procured, and I was

conveyed

conveyed to my own lodgings in a ſtate of mind that baffles all deſcription. The agitation of my thoughts produced a fever, which brought on a miſcarriage; and I believe it is well for my conſcience that heaven thus diſpoſed of my burden; for, let me own to you with penitence and horror, if I had brought a living child into the world, my frenzy would have prompted me to ſacrifice the little innocent to my reſentment of the father's infidelity.

After this event, my rage abated, and my hate became more deliberate and calm: when one day, my landlady informed me that there was a gentleman below who deſired to ſee me, he having ſomething of conſequence to impart, which he was ſure would contribute to my peace of mind. I was exceedingly alarmed at this declaration, which I attempted to interpret a thouſand ways; and before I came to any determination he entered my room, with an apology for intruding upon me againſt my knowledge or conſent. I ſurveyed him ſome time, and not being able to recollect his face, demanded with a faultering accent, what his buſineſs was with me? Upon which, he deſired I would give him a particular audience, and he did not doubt of communicating ſomething that would conduce to my ſatiſfaction and repoſe. As I thought myſelf ſufficiently guarded againſt any violence, I granted his requeſt, and bid the woman withdraw. The ſtranger then advancing, gave me to underſtand that he was well acquainted with the particulars of my ſtory, having been informed of them from Lothario's own mouth—that from the time he knew my misfortunes, he had entertained a deteſtation for the author of them; which had of late been increaſed, and inflamed to a deſire of revenge, by a piece of diſhonourable conduct towards him—that hearing of my melancholy ſituation, he had come with an intention of offering his aſſiſtance and comfort, and was ready to eſpouſe my quarrel, and forthwith take vengeance on my ſeducer, provided I would grant him one conſideration, which (he hoped) I ſhould ſee no reaſon to refuſe. Had all the artifice of hell been employed in

compoſing

composing a persuasive, it could not have had a more instantaneous or favourable effect than this discourse had upon me. I was transported with a delirium of gloomy joy; I hugged my companion in my arms, and vowed that if he would make good his promise, my soul and body should be at his disposal.—The contract was made; he devoted himself to my revenge, undertook to murder Lothario that very night, and to bring me an account of his death before morning. Accordingly, about two of the clock, he was introduced to my chamber, and assured me, my perfidious lover was no more; that although he was not entitled to such an honourable proceeding, he had fairly challenged him to the field, where he upbraided him with his treachery towards me, for whom (he told me) his sword was drawn, and after a few passes left him weltering in his blood.——I was so savaged by my wrongs, that I delighted in the recital of this adventure, made him repeat the particulars, feasted my eyes with the blood that remained on his clothes and sword, and yielded up my body as a recompence for the service he had done me. My imagination was so engrossed with these ideas, that in my sleep I dreamed Lothario appeared before me, pale, mangled, and bloody, blamed my rashness, protested his innocence, and pleaded his own cause so pathetically, that I was convinced of his fidelity, and waked in a fit of horror and remorse.—My bed fellow endeavoured to soothe, console, and persuade me that I had but barely done justice to myself.—I dropped asleep again, and the same apparition returned to my fancy.—In short, I passed the night in great misery, and looked upon my avenger with such abhorrence, that in the morning, perceiving my aversion, he insinuated there was still a possibility of Lothario's recovery; it was true, he left him wounded on the ground, but not quite dead; and perhaps his hurts might not be mortal.—At these words I started up, bade him fly for intelligence, and if he could not bring me tidings of Lothario's safety, at least consult his own; and never return, for I was resolved to surrender myself to justice, and declare all that

I knew of the affair, that, if poſſible, I might expiate my own guilt, by incurring the rigours of a ſincere repentance and ignominious death.——He very coolly repreſented the unreaſonableneſs of my prejudice againſt him, who had done nothing but what his love of me inſpired, and honour juſtified ;—that now he had, at the riſk of his life, been ſubſervient to my revenge, I was about to diſcard him, as an infamous agent, occaſionally neceſſary; and that even if he ſhould be ſo lucky as to bring news of Lothario's ſafety, it was probable my former reſentment might revive, and I would upbraid him with having failed in his undertaking.—I aſſured him, that on the contrary, he ſhould be dearer to me than ever, as I then ſhould be convinced he acted more on the principles of a man of honour, than on thoſe of a mercenary aſſaſſin, and ſcorned to take away the life of an adverſary (how inveterate ſoever) which fortune had put in his power.—"Well then, Madam, (ſaid he) whatever may have happened, I ſhall find it no difficult matter to acquit myſelf in point of honour."—And took his leave, in order to enquire into the conſequences of his duel.—I was now more ſenſible than ever of the degrees of guilt and miſery : all the affliction I had ſuffered hitherto was owing to my own credulity and weakneſs, and my conſcience could not accuſe me of venal crimes ; but now that I looked upon myſelf as a murderer, it is impoſſible to expreſs the terrors of my imagination, which was inceſſantly haunted by the image of the deceaſed, and my boſom ſtung with the moſt exquiſite agonies, of which I ſaw no end.—At length Horatio, (for ſo I ſhall call my keeper) returned, and telling me I had nothing to fear, delivered into my hands a billet, containing theſe words :

"Madam,

"As I underſtand it is of conſequence to your peace, I take this liberty to inform you, the wounds received from Horatio are not mortal. This ſatisfaction my humanity could not deny, even to a perſon who had

had endeavoured to disturb the repose, as well as destroy the life of LOTHARIO."

Being well acquainted with this hand, I had no reason to suspect an imposition in this letter, which I read over and over with a transport of joy, and caressed Horatio so much, that he appeared the happiest man alive. Thus was I won from despair by the menaces of a greater misfortune than that which depressed me.—Griefs are like usurpers; the most powerful deposes all the rest.—But my raptures were not lasting—that very letter, which in a manner re-established my tranquillity, in a little time banished my peace.—His unjust reproaches, while they waked my resentment, recalled my former happiness, and filled my soul with rage and sorrow.—Horatio perceiving the situation of my mind, endeavoured to divert my chagrin, by treating me with all the amusements and entertainments of the town. I was gratified with every indulgence I could desire; introduced into the company of other kept mistresses, by whom an uncommon deference was paid to me; and I began to loose all remembrance of my former condition, when an accident brought it back to my view, with all its interesting circumstances.—Diverting myself one day with some newspapers, which I had not before perused, the following advertisement attracted my attention:

"Whereas a young gentlewoman disappeared from her father's house, in the county of——, about the end of September, on account (as is supposed) of some uneasiness of mind, and has not been as yet heard of: Whoever will give any information about her to Mr. ———, of Gray's-inn, shall be handsomely rewarded; or if she will return to the arms of her disconsolate parent, she will be received with the utmost tenderness, whatever reason she may have to think otherwise, and may be the means of prolonging the life of a father, already weighed down almost to the grave with age and sorrow."

 This

This pathetic remonstrance had such an effect on me, that I was fully resolved to return like the prodigal son, and implore the forgivness of him who gave me life; but alas! upon inquiry, I found he had paid his debt to nature, a month before, lamenting my absence to his last hour, having left his fortune to a stranger, as a mark of his resentment of my unkind and undutiful behaviour.—Penetrated with remorse on this occasion, I sunk into the most profound melancholy, and considered myself as the immediate cause of his death.—I lost all relish for company, and indeed most of my acquaintance no sooner perceived my change of temper than they abandoned me. Horatio, disgusted at my insensibility, or (which is more probable) cloyed with possession, became colder and colder every day, till at last he left me altogether, without making any apology for his conduct, or securing me against the miseries of want, as a man of honour ought to have done, considering the share he had in my ruin: for I afterwards learned that, the quarrel between Lothario and him, was a story trumped up to rid the one of my importunities, and give the other the enjoyment of my person, which, it seems, he lusted after, upon seeing me at the house of my seducer.—Reduced to this extremity, I cursed my own simplicity, uttered horrid imprecations against the treachery of Horatio; and as I became every day more and more familiarized to the loss of innocence, resolved to be revenged on the sex in general, by practising their own arts upon themselves.—Nor was an opportunity long wanting; an old gentlewoman, under pretence of sympathizing, visited me, and after having condoled me on my misfortunes, and professed a disinterested friendship, began to display the art of her occupation, in encomiums on my beauty, and invectives against the wretch who had forsaken me; insinuating withal, that it would be my own fault if I did not still make my fortune by the extraordinary qualifications with which nature had endowed me.—I soon understood her drift, and gave her such encouragement to explain herself, that we

came

came to an agreement immediately, to divide the profits of my proſtitution, accruing from ſuch gallants as ſhe ſhould introduce to my acquaintance. The firſt ſtroke of my diſſimulation was upon a certain j—ge, to whom I was recommended by this matron, as an innocent creature juſt arrived from the country. He was ſo tranſported with my appearance and feigned ſimplicity, that he paid a hundred guineas for the poſſeſſion of me for one night only, during which I behaved in ſuch a manner, as to make him perfectly well pleaſed with his purchaſe.

CHAP. XVIII.

She is interrupted by a Bailiff, who arreſts and carries her to the Marſhalſea—I accompany her—Bring Witneſſes to prove ſhe is not the Perſon named in the Writ—The Bailiff is fain to give her a Preſent and diſcharge her—We ſhift our Lodging—She reſumes her Story, and ends it —My Reflexion thereupon—She makes me acquainted with the Progreſs of a common Woman of the Town—Reſolves to quit that Way of Life.

HER ſtory was here interrupted by a rap at the door, which I no ſooner opened, than three or four terrible fellows ruſhed in, one of whom accoſted my fellow lodger thus:—"Madam, your ſervant; you muſt do me the favour to come along with me—I have got a writ againſt you."—While the bailiff (for ſo he was) ſpoke thus, his followers ſurrounded the priſoner, and began to handle her very roughly.—This treatment incenſed me ſo much, that I ſnatched up the poker, and would certainly have uſed it in defence of the lady, without any regard to the ſtrength and number of her adverſaries, had ſhe not begged me, with a compoſure of countenance, for which I could not account, to uſe no violence in her behalf, which could be of no ſervice to her, but might be very detrimental to myſelf.—Then

turning to the leader of this formidable troop, ſhe deſired to ſee the writ, and having peruſed it, ſaid with a faultering voice, "I am not the perſon whoſe name is here mentioned; arreſt me at your peril."—"Aye, Aye, Madam, (replied the catchpole) we ſhall prove your identity.—In the mean time, whither will you be pleaſed to be carried, to my houſe, or to jail."—"If I muſt be confined, (ſaid ſhe) I would rather be in your houſe than in a common jail."—"Well, well, (anſwered he) if you have money enough in your pocket, you ſhall be entertained like a princeſs.—But, when ſhe acquainted him with her poverty, he ſwore he never gave credit, and ordered one of his myrmidons to call a coach, to carry her to the Marſhalſea at once.—While they waited for the convenience, ſhe took me aſide, and bade me be under no concern on her account, for ſhe knew how to extricate herſelf from this difficulty very ſoon, and perhaps gain ſomething by the occaſion.—Although her diſcourſe was a myſtery to me, I was very well pleaſed with her aſſurance; and when the coach came to the door, offered to accompany her to priſon, to which propoſal, after much intreaty, ſhe conſented.—When we arrived at the gate of the Marſhalſea, our conductor alighted, and having demanded entrance, preſented the writ to the turnkey, who no ſooner perceived the name of Elizabeth Cary, than he cried, "Ah hah! my old acquaintance Bett!" I'm glad to ſee thee with all my heart."—So ſaying, he opened the coach door, and helped her to diſmount; but when he obſerved her face, he ſtarted back, ſaying, "Z—nds! who have we got here!"—The bailiff, alarmed at this interrogation, cried with ſome emotion, "Who the devil ſhould it be but the priſoner, Elizabeth Cary?"—The turnkey replied, "That Elizabeth Cary!—I'll be damned if that's Elizabeth Cary, more than my grandmother.—D—n my blood, I know Bett Cary as well as if I had made her." Here the lady thought fit to interpoſe, and tell the catchpole, if he had taken her word for it at firſt, he might have ſaved himſelf and her a great deal of trouble

trouble.—"It may be so (answered he) but by G—d, I'll have further evidence that you are not the person, before you and I part."—"Yes, yes, (said she) you shall have further evidence to your cost."—Then we adjourned into the lodge, and called for a bottle of wine, where my companion wrote a direction to two of her acquaintance, and begged the favour of me to go to their lodgings, and request them to come to her immediately; I found them together, at a house in Brydges-street, Drury-lane; and as they were luckily unengaged, they set out with me in a hackney-coach, without hesitation, after I had related the circumstances of the affair, which flattered them with hopes of seeing a bailiff trounced; for there is an antipathy as natural between the whores and bailiffs, as that subsisting between mice and cats.—Accordingly, when they entered the lodge, they embraced the prisoner very affectionately, by the name of Nancy Williams, and asked how long she had been nabbed, and for what?—On hearing the particulars of her adventure repeated, they offered to swear, before a justice of peace, that she was not the person mentioned in the writ, whom, it seems, they all knew; but the bailiff, who was by this time convinced of his mistake, told them he would not put them to that trouble. "Ladies (said he) there's no harm done—you shall give me leave to treat you with another bottle, and then we'll part friends."—This proposal was not at all relished by the sisterhood; and Miss Williams told him, "Sure he did not imagine her such a fool as to be satisfied with a paltry glass of sour wine."—Here the turnkey interrupted her, by affirming, with an oath, that the wine was as good as ever was tipt over tongue.—— Well, (continued she) that may be—but was it the best of champaigne, it is no recompence for the damage I have suffered, both in character and in health, by being wrongfully dragged to jail.—At this rate no innocent person is safe, since an officer of justice, out of malice, private peak, or mistake, may injure and oppress the subject with impunity—but, thank Heaven, I live under the protection of

of laws that will not suffer such insults to pass unpunished, and I know very well how to procure redress."—Mr. Vulture, (for that was the bailiff's name) finding he had to deal with one that would not be imposed upon, began to look very sullen and perplexed, and leaning his forehead on his hand, entered into a deliberation with himself, which lasted a few minutes, and then broke out in a volley of dreadful curses against the old b—ch our landlady, (as he called her) for having misinformed him. —After much wrangling and swearing, the matter was referred to the decision of the turnkey, who, calling for the other bottle, mulcted the bailiff in all the liquor that had been drank, coach-hire, and a couple of guineas for the use of the plaintiff.—The money was immediately deposited: Miss Williams gratified the two evidences with one half, and putting the other in her pocket, drove home with me, leaving the catchpole grumbling over his loss, yet pleased in the main, for having so cheaply got clear of a business that might have cost him ten times the sum, and his place to boot.—This guinea was a very seasonable relief to us, who were reduced to great necessity, six of my shirts, and almost all my clothes, except those on my back, having been either pawned or sold for our maintenance before this happened.—As we resented the behaviour of our landlady, our first care was to provide ourselves with another lodging, whither we removed next day, with an intention to keep ourselves as retired as possible, until our cure should be completed. When we were fixed in our new habitation, I intreated her to finish the story of her life, which she pursued in this manner:

The success of our experiment on the j—ge encouraged us to practise the same deceit upon others, and my virginity was five times sold to good purpose: But this harvest lasted not long, my character taking air, and my directress deserting me for some new game. Then I took lodgings near Charing-cross, at two guineas per week, and began to entertain company in a public manner

manner:—but my income being too ſmall to defray my expence, I was obliged to retrench, and enter into articles with the porters of certain taverns, who undertook to find employment enough for me, provided I would ſhare my profits with them.—Accordingly I was, almoſt every night, engaged with company, among whom I was expoſed to every mortification, danger, and abuſe, that flow from drunkenneſs, brutality, and diſeaſe.—How miſerable is the condition of a courtezan, whoſe buſineſs is to ſoothe, ſuffer, and obey the dictates of rage, inſolence, and luſt!—As my ſpirit was not ſufficiently humbled to the will, nor by temper calculated for the converſation of my gallants, it was impoſſible for me to overcome an averſion I felt for my profeſſion, which manifeſted itſelf in a ſettled gloom on my countenance, and diſguſted thoſe ſons of mirth and riot ſo much, that I was frequently uſed in a ſhocking manner, and kicked down ſtairs with diſgrace.—The meſſengers ſeeing me diſagreeable to their benefactors and employers, ſeldom troubled me with a call, and I began to find myſelf almoſt totally neglected. To contribute towards my ſupport, I was fain to ſell my watch, rings, trinkets, with the beſt part of my clothes; and I was one evening muſing by myſelf, on the miſery before me, when I received a meſſage from a bagnio, whither I repaired in a chair, and was introduced to a gentleman dreſſed like an officer, with whom I ſupped in a ſumptuous manner, and after drinking a hearty glaſs of champaigne, went to bed.—In the morning, when I awoke, I found my gallant had got up, and drawing aſide the curtain, could not perceive him in the room. This circumſtance gave me ſome uneaſineſs, but as he might have retired on ſome neceſſary occaſion, I waited a full hour for his return; and then in the greateſt perplexity roſe up, and rung the bell. When the waiter came to the door, he found it locked, and deſired admittance, which I granted, after obſerving with great ſurprize, that the key remained on the inſide, as when he went to bed.—I no ſooner inquired for the captain, than the fellow ſtaring with a diſtracted

diſtracted look, cried, "How, Madam? is he not a-bed?" And when he was ſatisfied as to that particular, ran into a cloſet adjoining to the chamber, the window of which he found open.—Through this the adventurer had got upon a wall, from whence he dropped down into a court, and eſcaped? leaving me to be anſwerable, not only for the reckoning, but alſo for a large ſilver tankard and poſſet-bowl, which he had carried off with him.—It is impoſſible to deſcribe the conſternation I was under, when I ſaw myſelf detained as a thief's accomplice: for I was looked upon in that light, and carried before a juſtice, who, miſtaking my confuſion for a ſign of guilt, committed me, after a ſhort examination, to Bridewell, having adviſed me, as the only means to ſave my life, to turn evidence, and impeach my confederate.—I now concluded the vengeance of Heaven had overtaken me, and that I muſt ſoon finiſh my career by an ignominious death.—This reflection ſunk ſo deep into my ſoul, that I was for ſome days deprived of my reaſon, and actually believed myſelf in hell, tormented by fiends. Indeed, there needs not a very extravagant imagination to form that idea; for of all the ſcenes on earth, that of Bridewell comes neareſt the notion I had always entertained of the infernal regions.—Here I ſaw nothing but rage, anguiſh, and impiety; and heard nothing but groans, curſes, and blaſphemy.—In the midſt of this helliſh crew, I was ſubjected to the tyranny of a barbarian, who impoſed upon me taſks that I could not poſſibly perform, and then puniſhed my incapacity with the utmoſt rigour and inhumanity. I was often whipt into a ſwoon, and laſhed out of it, during which miſerable intervals, I was robbed by my fellow-priſoners of every thing about me, even to my cap, ſhoes, and ſtockings; I was not only deſtitute of neceſſaries, but even of food, ſo that my wretchedneſs was extreme. Not one of my acquaintance, to whom I imparted my ſituation, would grant me the leaſt ſuccour or regard, on pretence of my being committed for theft; and my landlord refuſed to part with ſome of my own clothes, which I ſent for,

becauſe

becauſe I was indebted to him for a week's lodging.—Overwhelmed with calamity, I grew deſperate, and reſolved to put an end to my grievances and life together: for this purpoſe I got up in the middle of the night, when I thought every body round me aſleep, and fixing one end of my handkerchief to a large hook in the cieling, that ſupported the ſcales on which the hemp is weighed, I ſtood upon a chair, and making a nooſe on the other end, put my neck into it, with an intention to hang myſelf; but before I could adjuſt the knot, I was ſurpriſed and prevented by two women who had been awake all the while, and ſuſpected my deſign.—In the morning my attempt was publiſhed among the priſoners, and puniſhed with thirty ſtripes, the pain of which, co-operating with my diſappointment and diſgrace, bereft me of my ſenſes, and threw me into an eeſtacy of madneſs, during which, I tore the fleſh from my bones with my teeth, and daſhed my head againſt the pavement.—So that they were obliged to ſet a watch over me, to reſtrain me from doing further miſchief to myſelf and others.—This fit of frenzy continued three days, at the end of which I grew calm and ſullen: but as the deſire of making away with myſelf ſtill remained, I came to a determination of ſtarving myſelf to death, and with this view refuſed all ſuſtenance. Whether it was owing to the want of oppoſition, or to the weakneſs of nature, I know not, but on the ſecond day of my faſt, I found my reſolution conſiderably impaired, and the calls of hunger almoſt inſupportable.—At this critical conjuncture, a lady was brought into priſon, with whom I had contracted an acquaintance while I lived with Horatio; ſhe was then on the ſame footing as I was, but afterwards quarrelling with her gallant, and not finding another to her mind, altered her ſcheme of life, and ſet up a coffee-houſe among the Hundreds of Drury, where ſhe entertained gentlemen with claret, arrack, and the choice of half a dozen of damſels, who lived in her houſe. This ſerviceable matron having neglected to gratify a certain j—ce for the connivance ſhe enjoyed, was

was indicted at the quarter session, in consequence of which her bevy was dispersed, and herself committed to Bridewell.—She had not been long there, before she learned my disaster, and coming up to me, after a compliment of condolence, inquired into the particulars of my fate: While we were engaged in discourse together, the master came and told me, that the fellow on whose account I had suffered was taken; that he had confessed the theft, and cleared me of any concern in the affair; for which reason, he, the master, had orders to discharge me, and that I was from that moment free. This piece of news soon banished all thoughts of death, and had such an instantaneous effect on my countenance, that Mrs. Coupler (the lady then present) hoping to find her account in me, very generously offered to furnish me with what necessaries I wanted, and take me into her own house, as soon as she should compromise matters with the j—es. The conditions of her offer were, that I should pay three guineas weekly for my board, and a reasonable consideration besides, for the use of such clothes and ornaments as she should supply me with, to be deducted from the first profits of my embraces.—These were hard terms, but not to be rejected by one who was turned out helpless and naked into the wide world, without a friend to pity or assist her.—I therefore embraced her proposal, and she, being bailed in a few hours, took me home with her in a coach. As I was by this time conscious of having formerly disgusted my admirers by my reserved and haughty behaviour, I now endeavoured to conquer that disposition, and the sudden change of my fortune giving me a flow of spirits, I appeared in the most winning and gay manner I could assume. Having the advantage of a good voice and education, I exerted my talents to the uttermost, and soon became the favourite with all company.—This success alarmed the pride and jealousy of Mrs. Coupler, who could not bear the thoughts of being eclipsed: She, therefore, made a merit of her envy, and whispered among the customers, that I was unsound.—There needed

needed no more to ruin my reputation, and blaſt my proſperity; every body ſhunned me with marks of averſion and diſdain, and in a very ſhort time I was as ſolitary as ever. Want of gallants was attended with want of money to ſatisfy my malicious landlady, who, having purpoſely given me credit to the amount of eleven pounds, took out a writ againſt me, and I was arreſted in her own houſe.—Though the room was crowded with people, when the bailiff entered, not one of them had compaſſion enough to mollify my proſecutrix, far leſs to pay the debt: they even laughed at my tears, and one of them bade me be of good cheer, for I ſhould not want admirers in Newgate. At that inſtant, a ſea-lieutenant came in, and ſeeing my plight, began to enquire into the circumſtances of my misfortune, when this wit adviſed him to keep clear of me, for I was a fire-ſhip.—" A fire-ſhip! (replied the ſailor) more like a poor gally in diſtreſs, that has been boarded by ſuch a fireſhip as you; if ſo be, as that is the caſe, ſhe ſtands in more need of aſſiſtance.—Harkee, my girl, how far have you over-run the conſtable?"—I told him that the debt amounted to eleven pounds, beſides the expence of the writ—" An' that be all (ſaid he) you ſhant go to the bilboes this bout."—And taking out his purſe, paid the money, diſcharged the bailiff, and telling me I had got into the wrong port, adviſed me to ſeek out a more convenient harbour, where I could be ſafely hove down, for which purpoſe he made me a preſent of five guineas more.—I was ſo touched with this ſingular piece of generoſity, that for ſome time I had not power to thank him.—However, as ſoon as I had recollected myſelf, I begged the favour of him to go with me to the next tavern, where I explained the nature of my diſaſter, and convinced him of the falſehood of what was reported to my prejudice ſo effectually, that he from that moment attached himſelf to me, and we lived in great harmony together, until he was obliged to go to ſea, where he periſhed in a ſtorm.

Having loſt my benefactor, and almoſt conſumed the remains of his bounty, I ſaw myſelf in danger of re-

lapſing into my former neceſſity, and began to be very uneaſy at the proſpect of bailiffs and jails;—when one of the ſiſterhood, a little ſtale, adviſed me to take lodgings in a part of the town where I was unknown, and paſs for an heireſs, by which artifice I might entrap ſomebody to be my huſband, who would poſſibly be able to allow me an handſome maintenance, or at worſt ſcreen me from the dread and danger of a priſon, by becoming liable for whatever debts I ſhould contract.—I approved of this ſcheme, towards the execution of which my companion clubbed her wardrobe, and undertook to live with me in quality of my maid; with the proviſo, that ſhe ſhould be reimburſed, and handſomely conſidered out of the profits of my ſucceſs.—She was immediately detached to look out for a convenient place, and that very day hired a genteel apartment in Park-ſtreet, whither I moved in a coach loaded with her baggage and my own.—I made my firſt appearance in a blue riding habit trimmed with ſilver; and my maid acted her part ſo artfully, that, in a day or two my fame was ſpread all over the neighbourhood, and I was ſaid to be a rich heireſs juſt arrived from the country.—This report brought a ſwarm of gay young fellows about me; but I ſoon found them out to be all indigent adventurers like myſelf, who crowded to me like crows to carrion, with a view of preying upon my fortune.—I maintained, however, the appearance of wealth, as long as poſſible, in hopes of gaining ſome admirer more for my purpoſe; and at length attracted the regard of one who would have ſatisfied my wiſhes; and managed matters ſo well, that a day was actually fixed for our nuptials: In the interim, he begged leave to introduce an intimate friend to me, which requeſt, as I could not refuſe, I had the extreme mortification and ſurpriſe to ſee next night, in that friend, my old keeper, Horatio, who no ſooner beheld me than he changed colour; but had preſence of mind to advance and ſalute me, bidding me (with a low voice) be under no apprehenſion, for he would not expoſe me.——In ſpite of this aſſurance, I could not recover myſelf ſo far, as

as to entertain them, but withdrew to my chamber, on pretence of a ſevere head ach, to the no ſmall concern of my adorer, who took his leave in the tendereſt manner, and went off with his friend.

Having imparted my ſituation to my companion, ſhe found it high time for us to decamp, and that without any noiſe, becauſe we were not only indebted to our landlady, but alſo to ſeveral tradeſmen in the neighbourhood.——Our retreat (therefore) was concerted and executed in this manner: Having packed up all our clothes and moveables in ſmall parcels, ſhe (on pretence of fetching cordials for me) carried them at ſeveral times to the houſe of an acquaintance, where ſhe likewiſe procured a lodging; to which we retired in the middle of the night, when every other body in the houſe was aſleep. I was now obliged to aim at lower game, and accordingly ſpread my nets among trades-people; but found them all too phlegmatic or cautious for my art and attractions; till at laſt I became acquainted with you, on whom I practiſed all my dexterity; not that I believed you had any fortune, or expectation of one, but that I might transfer the burthen of ſuch debts as I had incurred or ſhould contract, from myſelf to another; and at the ſame time avenge myſelf of your ſex, by rendering miſerable one, who bore ſuch reſemblance to the wretch who ruined me;——but Heaven preſerved you from my ſnares, by the diſcovery you made, which was owing to the negligence of my maid in leaving the chamber-door unlocked, when ſhe went to buy ſugar for breakfaſt.—The perſon in bed with me was a gentleman, whom I had allured the night before, as he walked homeward, pretty much elevated with liquor; for by this time my condition was ſo low, that I was forced to turn out, in the twilight, to the ſtreets, in hopes of prey.—When I found myſelf detected and forſaken by you, I was fain to move my lodgings, and dwell two pair of ſtairs higher than before: My companion being diſappointed in her expectations, left me, to trade upon her own bottom, and I had no other reſource, than to venture

ture forth, like the owls, in the dark, to pick up a precarious and uncomfortable subsistence. I have often sauntered between Ludgate-hill and Charing-cross a whole winter-night, exposed not only to the inclemency of the weather, but likewise to the rage of hunger and thirst, without being so happy as to meet with one cully; then creep up to my garret, in a deplorable, draggled condition, sneak to bed, and try to bury my appetite and sorrows in sleep.——When I lighted on some rake or tradesman, reeling home drunk, I frequently suffered the most brutal treatment, in spite of which I was obliged to affect gaiety and good humour, though my soul was stung with resentment and disdain, and my heart loaded with grief and affliction.—In the course of these nocturnal adventures, I was infected with the disease, that in a short time rendered me the object of my own abhorrence, and drove me to the retreat, where your benevolence rescued me from the jaws of death.

So much candour and good sense appeared in this lady's narration, that I made no scruple of believing every syllable of what she said; and expressed my astonishment at the variety of miseries she had undergone, in so little time; for all her misfortunes had happened within the compass of two years.—I compared her situation with my own, and found it a thousand times more wretched; I had endured hardships, 'tis true; my whole life had been a series of such; and when I looked forward, the prospect was not much bettered,—but then they were become habitual to me, and consequently I could bear them with less difficulty.—If one scheme of life should not succeed, I could have recourse to another, and so to a third, veering about to a thousand different shifts, according to the emergencies of my fate, without forfeiting the dignity of my character, beyond a power of retrieving it, or subjecting myself wholly to the caprice and barbarity of the world. On the other hand, she had known and relished the sweets of prosperity, she had been brought up under the wings of an indulgent

parent,

parent, in all the delicacies to which her ſex and rank entitled her; and without any extravagance of hope, entertained herſelf with the view of uninterrupted happineſs through the whole ſcene of life.—How fatal then, how tormenting, how intolerable muſt her reverſe of fortune be! a reverſe, that not only robs her of theſe external comforts, and plunges her into all the miſeries of want, but alſo murthers her peace of mind, and entails upon her the curſe of eternal infamy!——Of all profeſſions I pronounced that of a courtezan the moſt deplorable; and her, of all courtezans, the moſt unhappy.—She allowed my obſervation to be juſt in the main, but at the ſame time affirmed, that notwithſtanding the diſgraces which had fallen to her ſhare, ſhe had not been ſo unlucky, in the condition of a proſtitute, as many others of the ſame community.—"I have often ſeen, (ſaid ſhe) while I ſtrolled about the ſtreets at midnight, a number of naked wretches, reduced to rags and filth, huddled together like ſwine, in the corner of a dark alley; ſome of whom, but eighteen months before, I had known the favourites of the town, rolling in affluence, and glittering in all the pomp of equipage and dreſs."—And indeed the gradation is eaſily conceived: the moſt faſhionable woman of the town is as liable to contagion, as one in a much humbler ſphere; ſhe infects her admirers, her ſituation is public: ſhe is avoided, neglected, unable to ſupport her uſual appearance, which however ſhe ſtrives to maintain as long as poſſible, her credit fails, ſhe is obliged to retrench, and become a night-walker, her malady gains ground, ſhe tampers with her conſtitution, and ruins it; her complexion fades, ſhe grows nauſeous to every body, finds herſelf reduced to a ſtarving condition, is tempted to pick pockets, is detected, committed to Newgate, where ſhe remains in a miſerable condition, 'till ſhe is diſcharged becauſe the plaintiff will not appear to proſecute her. No body will afford her lodging, the ſymptoms of her diſtemper are grown outrageous, ſhe ſues to be admitted into an hoſpital, where ſhe is cured at the expenee of her noſe; ſhe is turned out naked into

the ſtreets, depends upon the addreſſes of the loweſt claſs, is fain to allay the rage of hunger and cold with gin, degenerates into a brutal inſenſibility, rots and dies upon a dunghill.——Miſerable wretch that I am, perhaps the ſame horrors are decreed for me!——" No, (cried ſhe, after ſome pauſe) I ſhall never live to ſuch extremity of diſtreſs! my own hand ſhall open a way for my deliverance, before I arrive at that forlorn period!" ——Her condition filled me with ſympathy and compaſſion; I revered her qualifications, looked upon her as unfortunate, not criminal, and attended her with ſuch care and ſucceſs, that in leſs than two months, her health, as well as my own, was perfectly re-eſtabliſhed.—As we often conferred upon our mutual affairs, and interchanged advice, a thouſand different projects were formed, which upon further canvaſſing appeared impracticable.—We would have gladly gone to ſervice; but who would take us in without recommendation? At length an expedient occurred to her, of which ſhe intended to lay hold; and this was, to procure, with the firſt money ſhe ſhould earn, the homely garb of a country wench, go to ſome village at a good diſtance from town, and come up in a waggon, as a freſh girl for ſervice; by which means ſhe might be provided for in a manner much more ſuitable to her inclination, than her preſent way of life.

CHAP. XXIV.

I am reduced to great Miſery—Aſſaulted on Tower-hill by a Preſs-gang, who put me on board a Tender—My Uſage there—My Arrival on board of the Thunder Man of War, where I am put in Irons, and afterwards releaſed by the good Offices of Mr. Thomſon, who recommends me as Aſſiſtant to the Surgeon—He relates his own Story, and makes me acquainted with the Characters of the Captain, Surgeon, and Firſt Mate.

I APPLAUDED the reſolution of Miſs Williams, who, a few days after, was hired in quality of bar-

keeper,

keeper, by one of the ladies who had witneſſed in her behalf at the Marſhalſea; and who ſince that time had got credit with a wine merchant, whoſe favourite ſhe was, to ſet up a convenient houſe of her own.—Thither my fellow lodger repaired, after having taken leave of me with a torrent of tears, and a thouſand proteſtations of eternal gratitude; aſſuring me ſhe would remain in this ſituation no longer than ſhe ſhould pick up money ſufficient to put her other deſign in execution.

As for my own part, I ſaw no reſource but the army or navy, between which I heſitated ſo long, that I found myſelf reduced to a ſtarving condition.—My ſpirit began to accommodate itſelf to my beggarly fate, and I became ſo mean as to go down towards Wapping, with an intention to enquire for an old ſchool-fellow, who (I underſtood, had got the command of a ſmall coaſting veſſel, then in the river, and implore his aſſiſtance.—but my deſtiny prevented this abject piece of behaviour; for as I croſſed Tower-wharf, a ſquat tawny fellow, with a hanger by his ſide, and a cudgel in his hand, came up to me, calling, "Yo, ho, brother, you muſt come along with me."—As I did not like his appearance, inſtead of anſwering his ſalutation, I quickened my pace, in hopes of ridding myſelf of his company; upon which he whiſtled aloud, and immediately another ſailor appeared before me, who laid hold of me by the collar, and began to drag me along.—Not being of a humour to reliſh ſuch treatment, I diſengaged myſelf of the aſſailant, and, with one blow of my cudgel, laid him motionleſs on the ground; and perceiving myſelf ſurrounded in a trice, by ten or a dozen more, exerted myſelf with ſuch dexterity and ſucceſs, that ſome of my opponents were fain to attack me with drawn cutlaſſes; and after an obſtinate engagement, in which I received a large wound on my head, and another on my left cheek, I was diſarmed, taken priſoner, and carried on board a preſſing-tender; where, after being pinioned like a malefactor, I was thruſt down into the hold, among a parcel of miſerable wretches, the ſight of whom well

well nigh diſtracted me.—As the commanding officer had not humanity enough to order my wounds to be dreſſed, and I could not uſe my own hands, I deſired one of my fellow captives who was unfettered, to take a handkerchief out of my pocket, and tie it round my head to ſtop the bleeding. He pulled out my handkerchief ('tis true) but inſtead of applying it to the uſe for which I deſigned it, went to the grating of the hatchway, and with aſtoniſhing compoſure, ſold it before my face to a bum boat-woman*, then on board, for a quart of gin, with which he treated my companions, regardleſs of my circumſtances and entreaties.

I complained bitterly of this robbery to the midſhipman on deck, telling him, at the ſame time, that unleſs my hurts were dreſſed, I ſhould bleed to death. But compaſſion was a weakneſs of which no man could juſtly accuſe this perſon, who ſquirted a mouthful of diſſolved tobacco upon me through the gratings, told me "I was a mutinous dog, and that I might die and be damned."—Finding there was no other remedy, I appealed to patience, and laid up this uſage in my memory, to be recalled at a fitter ſeaſon.—In the mean time, loſs of blood, vexation, and want of food, contributed, with the noiſome ſtench of the place, to throw me into a ſwoon; out of which I was recovered by a tweak of the noſe, adminiſtered by the tar who ſtood centinel over us, who at the ſame time regaled me with a draught of flip, and comforted me with the hopes of being put on board the Thunder next day, where I ſhould be freed of my handcuffs, and cured of my wounds by the doctor.—I no ſooner heard him name the Thunder, than I aſked, if he had belonged to that ſhip long? and he giving me to underſtand he had belonged to her five years, I enquired if he knew Lieutenant Bowling?—"Know Lieutenant Bowling, (ſaid he)—

* A bum-boat-woman is one who ſells bread, cheeſe, greens, liquor, and freſh proviſions to the ſailors, in a ſmall boat that lies along-ſide the ſhip.

odds

odds my life! that I do; and a good ſeaman he is, as ever ſtept upon forecaſtle,—and a brave fellow as ever crackt biſket;—none of your guinea-pigs,—nor your freſh-water, wiſhy-waſhy, fair-weather fowls.—Many a tough gale of wind has honeſt Tom Bowling and I weathered together.—Here's his health, with all my heart, wherever he is, a-loft or a-low—in heaven or in hell—all's one for that—he need not be aſhamed to ſhew himſelf."—I was ſo much affected with this eulogium, that I could not refrain from telling him, that I was Lieutenant Bowling's kinſman; in conſequence of which connexion, he expreſſed an inclination to ſerve me; and when he was relieved, brought ſome cold boiled beef in a platter, and biſcuit, on which we ſupped plentifully, and afterwards drank another can of flip together. While we were thus engaged, he recounted a great many exploits of my uncle, who, (I found) was very much beloved by the ſhip's company, and pitied for the misfortune that had happened to him in Hiſpaniola, which I was very glad to be informed was not ſo great as I imagined; for Captain Oakhum had recovered of his wounds, and actually at that time commanded the ſhip. Having, by accident, in my pocket my uncle's letter, written from Port Louis, I gave it my benefactor, (whoſe name was Jack Rattlin) for his peruſal; but honeſt Jack told me frankly he could not read, and deſired to know the contents; which I immediately communicated: When he heard that part of it, in which he ſays, he had written to his landlord in Deal, he cried, "Body o'me! that was old Ben Block—he was dead before the letter came to hand.—Ey, ey, had Ben been alive, Lieutenant Bowling would have had no occaſion to ſculk ſo long,—Honeſt Ben was the firſt man that taught him to hand, reef, and ſteer.—Well, well, we muſt all die, that's certain,—we muſt all come to port ſooner or later,—at ſea, or on ſhore;—we muſt be faſt moored one day;—death's like the beſt bower anchor, as the ſaying is, it will bring us all up."—I could not but ſignify my approbation of the juſtneſs

of

of Jack's reflections; and enquired into the occasion of the quarrel between Captain Oakum and my uncle; which he explained in this manner—"Captain Oakum is to be sure a good man enough,—besides, he's my commander:—but what's that to me?—I do my duty, and value no man's anger of a rope's end.—Now the report goes, as how he's a lord's, or *baron knight's* brother, whereby (d'ye see me) he carries a strait arm, and keeps aloof from his officers, thof, mayhap, they may be as good men in the main as he. Now we lying at anchor in Tiberoon bay, Lieutenant Bowling had the middle watch, and as he always kept a good look-out, he made (d'ye see) three lights in the offing, whereby he ran down to the great cabin for orders, and found the Captain asleep;—whereupon he waked him, which put him in a main high passion, and he swore woundily at the Lieutenant, and called him a lousy Scotch son of a whore, (for I being then centinel in the steerage, heard all) and swab and lubber, whereby the Lieutenant returned the salute, and they jawed together fore and aft a good spell, till at last the Captain turned out, and laying hold of a rattan, came athwart Mr. Bowling's quarter; whereby he told the Captain, that if he was not his commander, he would heave him overboard, and demanded satisfaction a-shore; whereby in the morning watch, the Captain went a shore in the pinnace, and afterwards the Lieutenant carried the cutter a-shore: and so they, leaving the boat's crews on their oars, went away together; and so (d'ye see) in less than a quarter of an hour we heard firing, whereby we made for the place, and found the Captain lying wounded on the beach, and so brought him on board to the doctor, who cured him in less than six weeks. But the Lieutenant clapt on all the sail he could bear, and had got far enough a-head before we knew any thing of the matter; so that we could never after get sight of him, for which we were not sorry, because the Captain was mainly wrath, and would certainly have done him a mischief;—for he afterwards caused him to be run on the ship's books, whereby he

lost

loſt all his pay, and if he ſhould be taken, would be tried as a deſerter."

This account of the captain's behaviour gave me no advantageous idea of his character: and I could not help lamenting my own fate, that had ſubjected me to ſuch a commander. However, making a virtue of neceſſity, I put a good face on the matter, and next day was, with the other preſſed men, put on board of the Thunder lying at the Nore.—When we came along ſide, the mate who guarded us thither, ordered my hand-cuffs to be taken off, that I might get on board the eaſier; this circumſtance being perceived by ſome of the company who ſtood upon the gang-boards to ſee us enter, one of them called to Jack Rattlin, who was buſied in doing this friendly office for me: "Hey, Jack, what Newgate galley have you boarded in the river as you came along? Have we not thieves enow among us already?" Another obſerving my wounds, which remained expoſed to the air, told me, my ſeams were uncaulked, and that I muſt be new payed.—A third, ſeeing my hair clotted together with blood, as it were into diſtinct cords, took notice, that my bows were manned with the red ropes, inſtead of my ſide.—A fourth aſked me, if I could not keep my yards ſquare without iron braces? And in ſhort, a thouſand witticiſms of the ſame nature were paſſed upon me, before I could get up the ſhip's ſide.—After we had been all entered upon the ſhip's books, I enquired of one of my ſhip-mates where the ſurgeon was, that I might have my wounds dreſſed, and had actually got as far as the middle deck (for our ſhip carried eighty guns) in my way to the cock-pit, when I was met by the ſame midſhipman, who had uſed me ſo barbarouſly in the tender: He ſeeing me free from my chains, aſked, with an inſolent air, who had releaſed me? To this queſtion I fooliſhly anſwered with a countenance that too plainly declared the ſtate of my thoughts; "Whoever did it, I am perſuaded did not conſult you in the affair."—I had no ſooner uttered theſe words, than he cried, "Damn you, you ſaucy

faucy fon of a bitch, I'll teach you to talk fo to your officer."—So faying he beftowed on me feveral fevere ftripes, with a fupple jack he had in his hand; and going to the commanding officer, made fuch a report of me, that I was immediately put in irons by the mafter at arms, and a centinel placed over me,—Honeft Rattlin, as foon as he heard of my condition, came to me, and adminiftered all the confolation he could, and then went to the furgeon in my behalf, who fent one of his mates to drefs my wounds. This mate was no other than my old friend Thomfon, with whom I became acquainted at the Navy-Office, as before mentioned. If I knew him at firft fight, it was not eafy for him to recognize me, disfigured with blood and dirt, and altered by the mifery I had undergone.—Unknown as I was to him, he furveyed me with looks of compaffion, and handled my fores with great tendernefs. When he had applied what he thought proper, and was about to leave me, I afked him if my misfortunes had difguifed me fo much, that he could not recollect my face? Upon this addrefs he obferved me with great earneftnefs for fome time, and at length, protefted he could not recollect one feature of my countenance.—To keep him no longer in fufpence, I told him my name: which when he heard, he embraced me with affection, and profeffed his forrow in feeing me in fuch a difagreeable fituation. I made him acquainted with my ftory, and when he heard how inhumanly I had been ufed in the tender, he left me abruptly, affuring me, I fhould fee him again foon. I had fcarce time to wonder at his fudden departure, when the mafter at arms came to the place of my confinement, and bade me follow him to the quarter deck, where I was examined by the firft lieutenant, who commanded the fhip in the abfence of the captain, touching the treatment I had received in the tender, from my friend the midfhipman, who was prefent to confront me.—I recounted the particulars of his behaviour to me, not only in the tender, but fince my being on board the fhip, part of which being proved by the evidence

dence of Jack Rattlin and others, who had no great devotion for my oppreſſor, I was diſcharged from confinement to make way for him, who was delivered to the maſter at arms to take his turn in the bilboes. And this was not the only ſatisfaction I enjoyed, for I was, at the requeſt of the ſurgeon, exempted from all other duty, than that of aſſiſting his mates in making and adminiſtering medicines to the ſick. This good office I owed to the friendſhip of Mr. Thompſon, who had repreſented me in ſuch a favourable light to the ſurgeon, that he demanded me of the lieutenant to ſupply the place of his third mate, who was lately dead. When I had obtained this favour, my friend Thompſon carried me down to the cock-pit, which is the place allotted for the habitation of the ſurgeon's mates: And when he had ſhewn me their birth, (as he called it) I was filled with aſtoniſhment and horror—We deſcended by divers ladders to a ſpace as dark as a dungeon, which I underſtood was immerſed ſeveral feet under water, being immediately above the hold: I had no ſooner approached this diſmal gulph, than my noſe was ſaluted with an intolerable ſtench of putrified cheeſe and rancid butter, that iſſued from an apartment at the foot of the ladder, reſembling a chandler's ſhop, where, by the faint glimmering of a candle, I could perceive a man, with a pale meagre countenance, ſitting behind a kind of deſk, having ſpectacles on his noſe, and a pen in his hand—This (I learned of Mr. Thompſon) was the ſhip's ſteward, who ſat there to diſtribute proviſion to the ſeveral meſſes, and to mark what each received. He therefore preſented my name to him, and deſired I might be entered in his meſs; then, taking a light in his hand, conducted me to the place of his reſidence, which was a ſquare of about ſix feet, ſurrounded with the medicine cheſt, that of the firſt mate, his own, and a board by way of table faſtened to the after powder-room: It was alſo incloſed with canvas, nailed round to the beams of the ſhip, to ſcreen us from the cold, as well as from the view of the midſhipmen and quarter-

masters, who lodged within the cable tiers on each side of us: In this gloomy mansion, he entertained me with some cold salt pork, which he brought from a sort of locker, fixed above the table; and, calling for the boy of the mess, sent for a can of beer, of which he made excellent flip to crown the banquet——By this time I began to recover my spirits, which had been exceedingly depressed with the appearance of every thing about me, and could no longer refrain from asking the particulars of Mr. Thompson's fortune, since I had seen him in London.—He told me, that being disappointed in his expectations of borrowing money to gratify the rapacious s—tary at the Navy-office, he found himself utterly unable to subsist any longer in town, and had actually offered his service, in quality of mate, to the surgeon of a merchant's ship bound to Guinea on the slaving trade, when one morning, a young fellow, of whom he had some acquaintance, came to his lodgings, and informed him, that he had seen a warrant made out in his name at the Navy-office, for surgeon's second mate of a third rate: This unexpected piece of good news he could scarcely believe to be true; more especially as he had been found qualified at Surgeon's hall for third mate only; but that he might not be wanting to himself, he went thither to be assured, and actually found it so: Whereupon, demanding his warrant, it was delivered to him, and the oaths administered immediately. That very afternoon he went to Gravesend in the tilt-boat, from whence he took a place in the tide-coach for Rochester; next morning got on board the Thunder, for which he was appointed, then lying in the harbour at Chatham; and the same day was mustered by the clerk of the checque.——And well it was for him that such expedition was used; for in less than twelve hours after his arrival, another William Thompson came on board, affirming that he was the person for whom the warrant was expedited, and that the other was an impostor. My friend was grievously alarmed at this accident, the more so, as his namesake had very much

the

the advantage over him, both in aſſurance and dreſs. However to acquit himſelf of the ſuſpicion of impoſture, he produced ſeveral letters written from Scotland to him in that name, and recollecting that his indentures were in a box on board, he brought them up, and convinced all preſent, that he had not aſſumed a name which did not belong to him.—His competitor, enraged that they ſhould heſitate in doing him juſtice, (for to be ſure, the warrant had been deſigned for him) behaved with ſo much indecent heat, that the commanding officer, (who was the ſame Gentleman I had ſeen) and the ſurgeon, who were offended at his preſumption, making a point of it with their friends in town, in leſs than a week got the firſt confirmed in his ſtation.—"I have been on board (ſaid he) ever ſince, and as this way of life is become familiar to me, have no cauſe to complain of my ſituation.—The ſurgeon is a good-natured indolent man; the firſt mate (who is now on ſhore on duty) is indeed a little proud and choleric, as all Welchmen are, but in the main, a friendly honeſt fellow.—The lieutenants I have no concern with; and as for the captain, he is too much of a gentleman to know a ſurgeon's mate, even by ſight."

CHAP. XXV.

The Behaviour of Mr. Morgan——His Pride, Diſpleaſure, and Generoſity——the Economy of our Meſs deſcribed——Thompſon's further Friendſhip.——The Nature of my Duty explained--The Situation of the Sick.

WHILE he was thus diſcourſing to me, we heard a voice on the cockpit ladder, pronounce with great vehemence, in a ſtrange dialect, The devil and his dam blow me from the top of Mounchdenny, if I go to him before there is ſomething in my pelly;—let his noſe be as yellow as ſaffron, or as plue as a pell (look you) or green as a leek, 'tis all one."—To this declaration ſomebody anſwered, "So it ſeems my poor meſs-mate muſt part his cable for want of a little aſſiſtance.—His

fore top-sail is loose already; and besides the doctor ordered you to over haul him;—but I see you don't mind what your master says."—Here he was interrupted with, "splutter and oons! you lousy tog, who do you call my master? get you gone to the doctor, and tell him my birth, and education, and my abilities; and moreover my behaviour is as good as his, or any shentleman's (no disparagement to him) in the whole world. Got pleis my soul! does he think, or conceive, or imagine, that I am a horse, or an ass, or a goat, to trudge backwards and forwards, and upwards and downwards, and by sea and by land, at his will and pleasure?—Go your ways you rapscallion, and tell doctor Atkins, that I desire and request, that he will give a look upon the tying man, and order something for him if he be dead or alive, and I will see him take it by and by, when my craving stomach is satisfied, look you."—At this the other went away, saying, that if they would serve him so when he was dying, by God, he would be foul of them in the other world.—Here Mr. Thompson let me know that the person we heard was Mr. Morgan the first mate, who was just come on board from the hospital, whither he had attended some of the sick in the morning.—At the same time I saw him come into the birth.—He was a short thick man with a face garnished with pimples, a snub nose turned up at the end, an excessive wide mouth, and little fiery eyes, surrounded with skin puckered up in innumerable wrinkles.—My friend immediately made him acquainted with my case; when he regarded me with a very lofty look, but without speaking, set down a bundle he had in his hand, and approached the cupboard, which when he had opened, he exclaimed in a great passion, "Cot is my life! all the pork is gone as I am a Christian!" Thompson then gave him to understand, that as I had been brought on board half famished, he could do no less than entertain me with what was in the locker; and the rather as he had bid the steward enter me into the mess.—Whether this disappointment made Mr. Morgan more peevish than

than usual, or he really thought himself too little regarded by his fellow mate, I know not, but, after some pause, he went on in this manner.—"Mr. Thompson, perhaps you do not use me with all the good manners, and complaisance, and respect, (look you) that becomes you, because you have not vouchsafed to advise with me in this affair.—I have, in my time, (look you) been a man of some weight and substance, and consideration, and have kept house and home, and paid scot and lot, and the king's taxes; aye, and maintained a family to boot. And moreover, also, I am your senior, and your elder, and your petter, Mr. Thompson."—"My elder, I'll allow you to be, but not my better," cried Thompson with some heat. "Cot is my Saviour, and witness too (said Morgan, with great vehemence) that I am more elder, and therefore more petter by many years than you."—Fearing this dispute might be attended with some bad consequence, I interposed, and told Mr. Morgan, I was very sorry for having been the occasion of any difference between him and the second mate; and that rather than cause the least breach in their good understanding, I would eat my allowance by myself, or seek admission into some other company.—But Thompson, with more spirit than discretion (as I thought) insisted upon my remaining where he had appointed me; and observing that no man possessed of generosity and compassion, would have any objection to it, considering my birth and talents, and the misfortunes I had of late so unjustly undergone.——This was touching Mr. Morgan on the right key, who protested with great earnestness, that he had no objection to my being received in the mess; but only complained, that the ceremony of asking his consent was not observed. "As for a shentleman in distress, (said he, shaking me by the hand,) I lofe him as I lofe my own powels: For Cot help me! I have had vexations enough upon my own pack." And as I afterwards learned, in so saying, he spoke no more than what was true; for he had been once settled in a very good situation in Glamorganshire, and was

ruined by being ſecurity for an acquaintance.—All differences being compoſed, he untied his bundle, which conſiſted of three bunches of onions, and a great lump of Cheſhire cheeſe wrapt up in a handkerchief; and taking ſome biſcuit from the cupboard, fell to with a keen appetite, inviting us to a ſhare of the repaſt.—When he had fed heartily on his homely fare, he filled a large cup made of a cocoa nut ſhell, with brandy, and drinking it off, told us, "Prandy was the menſtruum for onion and ſheeſe."—His hunger being appeaſed, he began to be in better humour; and being inquiſitive about my birth, no ſooner underſtood that I was deſcended of a good family, than he diſcovered a particular good will to me on that account, deducing his own pedigree in a direct line from the famous Caractacus, king of the Britons, who was firſt the priſoner, and afterwards the friend of Claudius Cæſar.—Perceiving how much I was reduced in point of linen, he made me a preſent of two good ruffled ſhirts, which, with two more of check, which I received from Mr. Thompſon, enabled me to appear with deſcency.—Meanwhile the ſailor, whom Mr. Morgan had ſent to the doctor, brought a preſcription for his meſs-mate, which when the Welchman had read, he got up to prepare it, and aſked if the man was "tead or alive." "Dead! (replied Jack) if he was dead, he would have no occaſion for doctor's ſtuff.—No, thank God, death han't as yet boarded him, but they have been yard arm and yard arm theſe three glaſſes." "Are his eyes open?" (continued the mate.) "His ſtarboard eye (ſaid the ſailor) is open, but faſt jamm'd in his head; and the haulyards of his under jaw have given way."——"paſſion of my heart! (cried Morgan) the man is as pad as one would deſire to be!—Did you feel his pulſe?" To this the other replied with "Anan?"—Upon which this Cambro Briton, with great earneſtneſs and humanity, ordered the tar to run to his meſs mate, and keep him alive till he ſhould come with the medicine, "and then (ſaid he) you ſhall peradventure pehold what you ſhall ſee."—The

poor

poor fellow with great ſimplicity ran to the place where the ſick man lay, but in leſs than a minute returned with a woeful countenance, and told us his comrade had ſtruck. Morgan hearing this, exclaimed. "Mercy upon my ſalvation! why did you not ſtop him till I came?"—"Stop him (ſaid the other) I hailed him ſeveral times, but he was too far on his way, and the enemy had got poſſeſſion of his cloſe quarters; ſo that he did not mind me."—"Well, well, (ſaid he) we all owe heaven a teath.—Go your ways, you ragamuffin, and take an example and a warning, look you, and repent of your miſteets."—So ſaying, he puſhed the ſeaman out of the birth.

While he entertained us with reflections ſuitable to this event, we heard the boatſwain pipe to dinner; and immediately the boy belonging to our meſs, ran to the locker, from whence he carried off a large wooden platter, and in a few minutes returned with it full of boiled peaſe, crying, "Scaldings," all the way as he came.—The cloth, conſiſting of a piece of an old ſail, was inſtantly laid, covered with three plates, which by the colour I could with difficulty diſcern to be metal, and as many ſpoons of the ſame compoſition, two of which were curtailed in the handles, and the other abridged in the lip. Mr. Morgan himſelf enriched this meſs with a lump of ſalt butter, ſcooped from an old gallipot, and a handful of onions ſhorn, with ſome pounded pepper. I was not very much tempted with the appearance of this diſh, of which, nevertheleſs, my meſs-mates eat heartily, and adviſing me to follow their example, as it was banyan-day, and we could have no meat till next noon. But I had already laid in ſufficient for the occaſion; and therefore deſired to be excuſed; expreſſing a curioſity to know the meaning of banyan-day.—They told me, that on Mondays, Wedneſdays and Fridays the ſhip's company had no allowance of meat, and that theſe meagre days were called banyan-days, the reaſon of which they did not know; but I have ſince learned they take their

their denomination from a ſect of devotees in ſome parts of the Eaſt-Indies, who never taſte fleſh.

After dinner, Thomſon led me round the ſhip, ſhewed me the different parts, deſcribed their uſes, and as far as he could, made me acquainted with the particulars of the diſcipline and economy practiſed on board—He then demanded of the boatſwain, an hammock for me, which was ſlung in a very neat manner by my friend Jack Rattlin; and as I had no bed-clothes, procured credit for me with the purſer, for a mattraſs and two blankets.—At ſeven o'clock in the evening Morgan viſited the ſick, and, having ordered what was proper for each, I aſſiſted Thompſon in making up his preſcriptions: but when I followed him with the medicines into the ſick birth or hoſpital, and obſerved the ſituations of the patients, I was much leſs ſurpriſed that people ſhould die on board, than that any ſick perſon ſhould recover.—Here I ſaw about fifty miſerable diſtempered wretches, ſuſpended in rows, ſo huddled one upon another, that not more than fourteen inches ſpace was allotted for each with his bed and bedding; and deprived of the light of day, as well as of freſh air; breathing nothing but a noiſome atmoſphere of the morbid ſteams, exhaling from their own excrements and diſeaſed bodies, devoured with vermin hatched in the filth that ſurrounded them, and deſtitute of every convenience neceſſary for people in that helpleſs condition.

CHAP. XXVI.

A diſagreeable Accident happens to me in the Diſcharge of my Office—Morgan's Noſe is offended—A Dialogue between him and the Ship's Steward—Upon Examination, I find more Cauſes of Complaint than one—My Hair is cut off—Morgan's Cookery—The manner of Sleeping on Board—I am waked in the Night by a dreadful Noiſe.

I COULD not comprehend how it was poſſible for the attendants to come near thoſe who hung on the inſide towards the ſides of the ſhip, in order to aſſiſt them, as they ſeemed barricadoed by thoſe who lay on the outſide, and entirely out of the reach of all viſitation.—

Much

Much leſs could I conceive how my friend Thompſon would be able to adminiſter clyſters, that were ordered for ſome in that ſituation; when I ſaw him thruſt his wig in his pocket, and ſtrip himſelf to his waiſtcoat in a moment, then creep on all four, under the hammocks of the ſick, and forcing up his bare pate between two, kept them aſunder with one ſhoulder, until he had done his duty.—Eager to learn the ſervice, I deſired he would give me leave to perform the next operation of that kind; and he conſenting, I undreſſed myſelf after his example, and crawling along, the ſhip happened to roll; this motion alarming me, I laid hold of the firſt thing that came within my graſp, with ſuch violence, that I overturned it, and ſoon found by the ſmell that iſſued upon me, I had not unlocked a box of the moſt delicious perfume; it was well for me that my noſe was none of the moſt delicate, elſe I know not how I might have been affected by this vapour, which diffuſed itſelf all over the ſhip, to the utter diſcompoſure of every body who tarried on the ſame deck;—neither was the conſequence of this diſgrace confined to my ſenſe of ſmelling only; for I felt my misfortune more ways than one. That I might not, however, appear altogether diſconcerted in this my firſt eſſay, I got up, and puſhing my head with great force between two hammocks, towards the middle, where the greateſt reſiſtance was, I made an opening, indeed, but not underſtanding the knack of dexterouſly turning my ſhoulder to maintain my advantage, had the mortification to find myſelf ſtuck up, as it were, in a pillory, and the weight of three or four people bearing on each ſide of my neck; ſo that I was in danger of ſtrangulation.—While I remained in this defenceleſs poſture, one of the ſick men, rendered peeviſh by his diſtemper, was ſo enraged at the ſmell I had occaſioned, and the rude ſhock he had received from me in my elevation, that with many bitter reproaches, he ſeized me by the noſe, which he tweaked ſo unmercifully, that I roared with anguiſh. Thompſon perceiving my condition, ordered one of the waiters to my aſſiſtance, who

with

with much difficulty disengaged me from this situation, and hinderedme from taking vengeance on the sick man, whose indisposition would not have screened him from the effects of my indignation.

After having made an end of our ministry for that time, we descended to the cock-pit, my friend comforting me for what had happened, with a homely proverb, which I do not chuse to repeat. When we had descended half way down the ladder, Mr. Morgan, before he saw us, having intelligence by his nose of the approach of something extraordinary, cried, "Cot have mercy upon my senses! I believe the enemy has poarded us in a stink pot!" Then directing his discourse to the steward, from whom he imagined the odour proceeded, he reprimanded him severely for the freedoms he took among gentlemen of birth, and threatened to smoak him like a padger with sulphur, if he ever should presume to offend his neighbours with such smells for the future: The steward, conscious of his own innocence, replied with some warmth, "I know of no smells but those of your own making."—This repartee introduced a smart dialogue, in which the Welchman undertook to prove, that though the stench he complained of did not flow from the steward's own body, he was nevertheless the author of it, by serving out damaged provisions to the ship's company; and in particular putrified cheese, from the use of which only, he affirmed, such unsavory steams could arise.—Then he launched out into the praise of good cheese, of which he gave the analysis; he explained the different kinds of that commodity, with the methods practised to make and preserve it; and concluded with observing, that in yielding good cheese, the country of Glamorgan might vie with Cheshire itself, and was much superior to it in the produce of goats and putter. I gathered from this conversation, that if I entered in my present pickle, I should be no welcome guest, and therefore desired Mr. Thompson to go before, and represent my calamity: at which the first mate expressing some concern, went upon deck immediately, taking

taking his way through the cable tier, and by the main hatchway, to avoid encountering me; desiring me to clean myself as soon as possible, for he intended to regale himself with a dish of salmagundy and a pipe.—Accordingly I set about this disagreeable business, and soon found I had more causes of complaint than I at first imagined; for I perceived some guests had honoured me with their company, whose visit I did not at all think seasonable; neither did they seem inclined to leave me in a hurry, for they were in possession of my chief quarters, where they fed without reserve at the expence of my blood.—But considering it would be much easier to extirpate this ferocious colony in the infancy of their settlement, than after they should be multiplied and naturalized to the soil, I took the advice of my friend, who, to prevent such misfortunes, went always close shaved, and made the boy of our mess cut off my hair, which had been growing since I left the service of Lavement; and the second mate lent me an old bob wig to supply the loss of that covering. This affair being ended, and every thing adjusted in the best manner my circumstances would permit, the descendant of Caractacus returned, and ordering the boy to bring a piece of salt beef from the brine, cut off a slice and mixed it with an equal quantity of onions, which seasoning with a moderate proportion of pepper and salt, he brought it into a consistence with oil and vinegar. Then tasting the dish, assured us, it was the best salmagundy that ever he made, and recommended it to our palate with such heartiness, that I could not help doing honour to his preparation. But I had no sooner swallowed a mouthful, than I thought my entrails were scorched, and endeavoured, with a deluge of small beer, to allay the heat it occasioned.—Supper being over, Mr. Morgan having smoaked a couple of pipes, and supplied the moisture he had expended with as many cans of flip, of which we all partook, a certain yawning began to admonish me, that it was high time to repair by sleep the injury I had suffered from want of rest the preceding night; which, being perceived by my companions,

nions, whose time of repose was now arrived, they proposed we should turn in, or in other words, go to bed. Our hammocks, which hung parallel to one another, on the outside of the birth, were immediately unlashed, and I beheld my messmates spring with great agility into their respective nests, where they seemed to be concealed, very much at their ease. But it was some time before I could prevail upon myself to trust my carcase at such a distance from the ground, in a narrow bag, out of which, I imagined, I should be apt, on the least motion in my sleep, to tumble down, at the hazard of breaking my bones, I suffered myself, however, to be persuaded, and taking a leap to get in, threw myself quite over, with such violence, that, had I not luckily got hold of Thompson's hammock, I should have pitched upon my head on the other side, and, in all likelihood, fractured my skull.—After some fruitless efforts, I succeeded at last; but the apprehension of the jeopardy in which I believed myself, withstood all the attacks of sleep, till towards the morning watch, when, in spite of my fears, I was overpowered with slumber: though I did not long enjoy this comfortable situation; being aroused with a noise so loud and shrill, that I thought the drums of my ears were burst by it; this was followed by a dreadful summons, pronounced by a hoarse voice, which I could not understand. While I was debating with myself whether or not I should wake my companion, and enquire into the occasion of this disturbance, I was informed by one of the quarter-masters, who passed by me with a lanthorn in his hand, that the noise which alarmed me, was occasioned by the boatswain's mates, who called up the larboard watch, and that I must lay my account with such interruption every morning at the same hour.—Being now more assured of my safety, I addressed myself again to rest, and slept till eight o'clock, when rising, and breakfasting with my comrades, on biscuit and brandy, the sick were visited and assisted as before; after which visitation my good friend Thompson explained and performed another piece of duty, to which I was a stranger.

ſtranger. At a certain hour in the morning, the boy of the meſs went round all the decks, ringing a ſmall hand-bell, and in rhimes compoſed for the occaſion, invited all thoſe who had ſores, to repair before the maſt, where one of the doctor's mates attended, with applications to dreſs them.

CHAP. XXVII.

I acquire the Friendſhip of the Surgeon, who procures a Warrant for me, and makes me a Preſent of Cloaths—A Battle between a Midſhipman and me—The Surgeon leaves the Ship—The Captain comes on Board with another Surgeon—A Dialogue between the Captain and Morgan—The Sick are ordered to be brought upon the Quarter deck and examined—The Conſequences of that Order—A Madman accuſes Morgan, and is ſet at Liberty by command of the Captain, whom he inſtantly attacks and pummels without Mercy.

WHILE I was buſied with my friend in this practice, the doctor chanced to paſs by the place where we were, and, ſtopping to obſerve me, appeared very well ſatisfied with my method of application: and afterwards ſent for me to his cabin, where having examined me touching my ſkill in ſurgery, and the particulars of my fortune, he intereſted himſelf ſo far in my behalf, as to promiſe his aſſiſtance in procuring a warrant for me, ſeeing I had been already found qualified at Surgeon's-hall for the ſtation I filled on board; and in this good office he the more cordially engaged, when he underſtood I was nephew to Lieutenant Bowling, for whom he expreſſed a particular regard.—In the mean time, I could learn from his diſcourſe, that he did not intend to go to ſea again with Captain Oakum, having, as he thought, been indifferently uſed by him during the laſt voyage.

While I lived tolerably eaſy, in expectation of preferment, I was not altogether without mortifications, which

I not only ſuffered from the rude inſults of the ſailors and petty officers, among whom I was known by the name of *Loblolly Boy* ; but alſo from the diſpoſition of Morgan, who, though friendly in the main, was often very troubleſome with his pride, which expected a good deal of ſubmiſſion from me, and delighted in recapitulating the favours I received at his hands.

About ſix weeks after my arrival on board, the ſurgeon bidding me follow him into his cabin, preſented a warrant to me, by which I was appointed ſurgeon's third mate on board the Thunder—This he had procured by his intereſt at the Navy Office, as alſo another for himſelf, by virtue of which he was removed into a ſecond rate. I acknowledged his kindneſs in the ſtrongeſt terms my gratitude could ſuggeſt, and profeſſed my ſorrow at the proſpect of loſing ſo valuable a friend, to whom I hoped to have recommended myſelf ſtill further, by my reſpectful and diligent behaviour.—But his generoſity ended not here ;—for, before he left the ſhip, he made me a preſent of a cheſt and ſome cloaths, that enabled me to ſupport the rank to which he had raiſed me.—I found my ſpirits revive with my good fortune; and now I was an officer, reſolved to maintain the dignity of my ſtation, againſt all oppoſition or affronts; nor was it long before I had occaſion to exert my reſolution: my old enemy, the midſhipman (whoſe name was Crampley) entertaining an implacable animoſity againſt me for the diſgrace he had ſuffered on my account, had ſince that time taken all opportunities of reviling and ridiculing me, when I was not entitled to retort this bad uſage. And even after I had been rated on the books, and muſtered as ſurgeon's mate, did not think fit to reſtrain his inſolence.—In particular, being one day preſent while I dreſſed a wound in a ſailor's leg, he began to ſing a ſong, which I thought highly injurious to the honour of my country, and therefore ſignified my reſentment, by obſerving, that the Scots always laid their account with finding enemies among the ignorant, inſignificant and malicious.—This unexpected piece of aſſurance

enraged

enraged him to ſuch a degree, that he lent me a blow on the face, which I verily thought had demoliſhed my cheek bone; I was not ſlow in returning the obligation, and the affair began to be very ſerious, when by accident Mr. Morgan, and one of the maſter's mates, coming that way, interpoſed, and enquired into the cauſe, endeavoured to promote a reconciliation; but finding us both exaſperated to the utmoſt, and bent againſt accommodation, they adviſed us, either to leave our difference undecided till we ſhould have an opportunity of terminating it on ſhore like gentlemen, or elſe chooſe a proper place on board, and bring it to an iſſue by boxing. This laſt expedient was greedily embraced by us both; and being forthwith conducted to the ground propoſed, we ſtript in a moment, and began a very furious conteſt, in which I ſoon found myſelf inferior to my antagoniſt, not ſo much in ſtrength and agility, as in ſkill, which he had acquired at the ſchool of Hockley in the Hole, and Tottenham-Court.—Many croſs buttocks did I ſuſtain, and pegs on the ſtomach without number, till at laſt my breath being quite gone, as well as my vigour quite waſted, I grew deſperate, and collecting all my ſtrength in one effort, threw in at once, head, hands, and feet, with ſuch violence, that I drove my antagoniſt three paces backwards into the main hatchway, down which he fell, and pitching upon his head and right ſhoulder remained without ſenſe and motion.—Morgan looking down, and ſeeing him lie in that condition, cried, "Upon my conſcience, as I am a Chriſtian ſinner, (look you) I believe his pattles are all ofer; but I take you all to witneſs, there was no treachery in the caſe, and that he has ſuffered by the chance of war."—So ſaying he deſcended to the deck below, to examine into the ſituation of my adverſary; and left me very little pleaſed with my victory, as I found myſelf not only terribly bruiſed, but likewiſe in danger of being called to an account for the death of Crampley: but this fear vaniſhed when my fellow-mate, having, by bleeding him in the jugular, brought him to himſelf, and inquired

into the ſtate of his body, calling up to me to be under no concern, for the midſhipman had received no other damage, than as pretty a luxation of the *os humeri*, as one would deſire to ſee on a ſummer's day.—Upon this information, I crawled down to the cockpit, and acquainted Thompſon with the affair, who, providing himſelf with bandages, &c. neceſſary for the occaſion, went up to aſſiſt Mr. Morgan in the reduction of the diſlocation.—When this was ſucceſsfully performed, they wiſhed me joy of the event of the combat; and the Welchman, after obſerving, that in all likelihood, the ancients Scots and Britons were the ſame people, bade me, "praiſe Cot for putting mettle in my pelly, and ſtrength in my limbs to ſupport it."—I acquired ſuch reputation by this rencounter (which laſted twenty minutes) that every body became more cautious in behaviour towards me; though Crampley, with his arm in a ſling, talked very high, and threatened to ſeize the firſt opportunity of retrieving on ſhore, the honour he had loſt by an accident, from which I could juſtly claim no merit.

About this time, captain Oakum, having received ſailing orders, came on board, and brought along with him a ſurgeon of his own country, who ſoon made us ſenſible of the loſs we ſuffered in the departure of doctor Atkins; for, he was groſsly ignorant, and intolerably aſſuming, falſe, vindictive, and unforgiving; a merciless tyrant to his inferiors, an abject ſycophant to thoſe above him. In the morning after the captain came on board, our firſt mate, according to cuſtom, went to wait on him with a ſick liſt, which when this grim commander had peruſed, he cried with a ſtern countenance, "Blood and oons! ſixty-one ſick people on board of my ſhip!—Harkee, you ſir, I'll have no ſick in my ſhip, by G—d." The Welchman replied, he ſhould be very glad to find no ſick people on board; but while it was otherwiſe, he did no more than his duty in preſenting him with a liſt.—"You and your liſt may be d—n'd, (ſaid the captain throwing it at him) I ſay, there ſhall be no ſick in the ſhip while I have the command of her."—

Mr.

Mr. Morgan being nettled at this treatment, told him, his indignation ought to be directed to Got Almighty, who visited his people with distempers, and not to him, who contributed all in his power towards their cure. The bashaw not being used to such behaviour in any of his officers, was enraged to fury at this satirical insinuation, and stamping with his foot, called him insolent scoundrel, threatened to have him pinioned to the deck, if he should presume to utter another syllable. But the blood of Caractacus being thoroughly heated, disdained to be restricted by such a command, and began to manifest itself in, "Captain Oagum, I am a shentleman of birth and parentage (look you) and paradventure I am moreover——" Here his harangue was broke off by the captain's steward, who, being Morgan's countryman, hurried him out of the cabin before he had time to exasperate his master to a great degree: and this would certainly have been the case; for the indignant Welchman could hardly be hindered, by his friend's arguments and entreaties, from re entering the presence chamber, and defying Captain Oakum to his teeth.—He was, however, appeased at length, and came down to the birth, where finding Thompson and me at work, preparing medicines, he bade us leave off our labour and go to play, for the captain by his sole word and power and command, had driven sickness a pegging to the tevil, and there was no more malady on board. So saying, he drank off a gill of brandy, sighed grievously three times, poured forth an ejaculation of "Got pless my heart, liver and lungs!" and then began to sing a Welch song with great earnestness of visage, voice, and gesture.—I could not conceive the meaning of this singular phaenomenon, and saw by the looks of Thompson, who at the same time shook his head, that he suspected poor Cadwalladar's brains were unsettled. He perceiving our amazement, told us he would explain the mystery; but at the same time bade us take notice, that he had lived poy, patchelor, married man, and widower, almost forty years, and in all that time, there was no man nor

mother's ſon in the whole world, who durſt uſe him ſo ill as captain Oakum, had done. Then he acquainted us with the dialogue that paſſed between them, as I have already related it; and had no ſooner finiſhed this narration, than he received a meſſage from the ſurgeon, to bring the ſick liſt to the quarter-deck, for the captain had ordered all the patients thither to be reviewed.—This inhuman order ſhocked us extremely, as we knew it would be impoſſible to carry ſome of them on the deck without imminent danger of their lives; but as we likewiſe knew it would be to no purpoſe for us to remonſtrate againſt it, we repaired to the quarter-deck in a body, to ſee this extraordinary muſter; Morgan obſerving by the way that the captain was going to ſend to the other world, a great many evidences to teſtify againſt himſelf.—When we appeared upon deck, the captain bade the doctor, who ſtood bowing at his right hand, look at theſe lazy lubberly ſons of bitches, who were good for nothing on board but to eat the king's proviſion, and encourage idleneſs in the ſkulkers.—The ſurgeon grinned approbation, and taking the liſt, began to examine the complaints of each as they could crawl to the place appointed.—The firſt who came under his cognizance was a poor fellow juſt freed of a fever, which had weakened him ſo much, that he could hardly ſtand.—Mr. Mackſhane (for that was the doctor's name) having felt his pulſe, proteſted he was as well as any man in the world, and the captain delivered him over to the boatſwain's mate, with orders that he ſhould receive a round dozen at the gang-way immediately, for counterfeiting himſelf ſick:—but before the diſcipline could be executed, the man dropt down on the deck, and had well nigh periſhed under the hands of the executioner.—The next patient to be conſidered, laboured under a quartan ague, and being then in his interval of health diſcovered no other ſymptoms of diſtemper, than a pale meagre countenance, and emaciated body; upon which he was declared fit for duty, and turned over to the boatſwain;—but being reſolved to diſgrace the doctor, died

upon

upon the forecaſtle next day, during his cold fit.—The third complained of a pleuritic ſtitch, and ſpitting of blood, for which doctor Mackſhane preſcribed exerciſe at the pump, to promote expectoration; but whether this was improper for one in his ſituation, or that it was uſed to exceſs, I know not, but in leſs than half an hour, he was ſuffocated with a deluge of blood that iſſued from his lungs.—A fourth, with much difficulty, climbed to the quarter-deck, being loaded with a monſtrous aſcites or dropſy, that invaded his cheſt ſo much, he could ſcarce fetch his breath; but his diſeaſe being interpreted into fat, occaſioned by idleneſs and exceſs of eating, he was ordered, with a view to promote perſpiration and enlarge his cheſt, to go aloft immediately. It was in vain for this unwieldy wretch to alledge his utter ncapacity, the boatſwain's driver was commanded to hip him up with the cat and nine tails. The ſmart of s application made him exert himſelf ſo much, that he ctually arrived at the puttoc ſhrouds; but when the normous weight of his body had nothing elſe to ſupport it than his weakened arms, either out of ſpite or ceſſity he quitted his hold, and plunged into the ſea, here he muſt have been drowned, had not a ſailor, who was in a boat along-ſide, ſaved his life by keeping him afloat till he was hoiſted on board by a tackle.—It would be tedious and diſagreeable to deſcribe the fate of every miſerable object that ſuffered by the inhumanity and ignorance of the captain and ſurgeon, who ſo wantonly ſacrificed the lives of their fellow-creatures. Many were brought up in the height of fevers, and rendered delirious by the injuries they received in the way—Some gave up the ghoſt in the preſence of their inſpectors; and others, who were ordered to their duty, languiſhed a few days at work among their fellows, and then departed without any ceremony. On the whole, the number of ſick was reduced to leſs than a dozen; and the authors of this reduction were applauding themſelves for the ſervices they had done to their king and country, when the boatſwain's mate informed his honour, that

there

there was a man below laſhed to his hammock by the direction of the doctor's mate, and that he begged hard to be releaſed: affirming, he had been ſo maltreated only for a grudge Mr. Morgan bore him, and that he was as much in his ſenſes as any man aboard.—The captain hearing this, darted a ſevere look at the Welchman, and ordered the man to be brought up immediately. Upon which, Morgan proteſted with great fervency, that the perſon in queſtion was as mad as a March-hare; and begged for the love of Got, they would at leaſt keep his arms pinioned during his examination, to prevent him from doing miſchief. This requeſt the commander granted for his own ſake, and the patient was produced, who inſiſted upon his being in his right wits with ſuch calmneſs and ſtrength of argument, that every body preſent was inclined to believe him, except Morgan, wh affirmed there was no truſting to appearances; for h himſelf had been ſo much impoſed upon by his behavi our two days before, that he had actually unbound hi with his own hands, and had well nigh been murdered f his pains; this was confirmed by the evidence of one the waiters, who declared, he had pulled this patie from the doctor's mate, whom he had gotten down an almoſt ſtrangled.—To this the man anſwered, that the witneſs was a creature of Morgan's, and was ſuborned to give his teſtimony againſt him by the malice of the mate, whom the defendant had affronted, by diſcovering to the people on board that Mr. Morgan's wife kept a gin-ſhop in Rag Fair.—This anecdote produced a laugh at the expence of the Welchman, who ſhaking his head with ſome emotion, ſaid, "Aye, aye, 'tis no matter.—Got knows, it is an arrant falſehood."—Captain Oakum, without any farther heſitation, ordered the fellow to be unfettered; at the ſame time, threatening to make Morgan exchange ſituations with him for his ſpite. But the Briton no ſooner heard the deciſion in favour of the madman, than he got up to the mizen ſhrouds, crying to Thompſon and me to get out of his reach, for we ſhould ſee him play the devil with a vengeance —

ance.—We did not think fit to disregard his caution and accordingly got up on the poop, whence we beheld the maniac (as soon as he was released) fly at the captain like a fury, crying, "I'll let you know, you scoundrel, that I am commander of this vessel,"— and pummelled him without mercy. The surgeon, who went to the assistance of his patron, sharing the same fate; and it was with the utmost difficulty that he was mastered at last, after having done great execution among those who opposed him.

CHAP. XXVIII.

The Captain enraged, threatens to put the Madman to death with his own Hand—Is diverted from that Resolution by the Arguments and Persuasions of the First Lieutenant and Surgeon—We set Sail for St. Helen's, join the Fleet under the Command of Sir C—n——r O———le, and proceed for the West-Indies—Are overtaken by a terrible Tempest—My Friend Jack Rattlin has his Leg broke by a Fall from the Main yard—The Behaviour of Doctor Mackshane—Jack opposes the Amputation of his Limb, in which he is seconded by Morgan and me, who undertake the Cure, and perform it successfully.

THE captain was carried into his cabin, so enraged with the treatment he had received, that he ordered the fellow to be brought before him, that he might have the pleasure of pistoling him with his own hand; and would certainly have satisfied his revenge in this manner, had not the first lieutenant remonstrated against it, by observing, that in all appearance the fellow was not mad, but desperate; that he had been hired by some enemy of the captain to assassinate him, and therefore ought to be kept in irons till he could be brought to a court-martial, which, no doubt, would sift the affair to the bottom, (by which means, important discoveries might be made) and then sentence the criminal

nal tc a death adequate to his demerits.—This ſuggeſtion, improbable as it was, had the deſired effect upon the captain, being exactly calculated for the meridian of his intellects; more eſpecially, as Dr. Mackſhane eſpouſed this opinion, in conſequence of his previous declaration that the man was not mad.—Morgan finding there was no more damage done, could not help diſcovering, by his countenance, the pleaſure he enjoyed on this occaſion; and while he bathed the doctor's face with an embrocation, ventured to aſk him, whether he thought there were more fools or madmen on board? But he would have been wiſer in reſtraining this ſally, which his patient carefully laid up in his memory, to be taken notice of at a more fit ſeaſon. Mean while we weighed anchor, and on our way to the Downs, the madman, who was treated as a priſoner, took an opportunity while the centinel attended him at the head, to leap over-board, and fruſtrate the revenge of the captain. We ſtaid not long at the Downs, but took the benefit of the firſt eaſterly wind to go round to Spithead; when, having received on board proviſions for ſix months, we ſailed from St. Helen's in the grand fleet bound for the Weſt Indies, on the ever-memorable expedition of Carthagena.

It was not without great mortification I ſaw myſelf on the point of being tranſported to ſuch a diſtant and unhealthy climate, deſtitute of every convenience that could render ſuch a voyage ſupportable; and under the dominion of an arbitrary tyrant, whoſe command was almoſt intolerable: However, as theſe complaints were common to a great many on board, I reſolved to ſubmit patiently to my fate, and contrive to make myſelf as eaſy as the nature of the caſe would allow.——We got out of the channel with a proſperous breeze, which died away, leaving us becalmed about fifty leagues to the weſtward of the lizard: but this ſtate of inaction did not laſt long; for next night our main-top ſail was ſplit by the wind, which in the morning increaſed to a hurricane.——I was wakened by a moſt horrible din,

occaſioned

occasioned by the play of the gun carriages upon the deck above, the cracking of the cabins, the howling of the wind through the shrouds, the confused noise of the ship's crew, the pipes of the boatswain and his mates, the trumpets of the lieutenants, and the clanking of the chain pumps.—Morgan, who had never been at sea before, turned out in a great hury, crying, "Got have mercy and compassion upon us! I believe we have got upon the confines of Lucifer and the d—mned!" while poor Thompson lay quaking in his hammock, putting up petitions to Heaven for our safety.——I rose and joined the Welchman, with whom, (after having fortified ourselves with brandy) I went above: but if my sense of hearing was startled before, how must my sight have been appalled in beholding the effects of the storm! The sea was swelled into billows mountains high, on the top of which our ship sometimes hung as if it was about to be precipitated to the abyss below! Sometimes we sunk between two waves that rose on each side higher than our topmast-head, and threatened, by dashing together, to overwhelm us in a moment; Of all our fleet, consisting of a hundred and fifty sail, scarce twelve appeared, and these driving under their bare poles, at the mercy of the tempest. At length the mast of one of them gave way, and tumbled over-board with a hideous crash! Nor was the prospect in our own ship much more agreeable; a number of officers and sailors ran backward and forward, with distraction in their looks, hallooing to one another, and undetermined what they should attend to first. Some clung to the yards, endeavouring to unbend the sails, that were split into a thousand pieces, flapping in the wind; others tried to furl those which were yet whole, while the masts, at every pitch, bent and quivered like twigs, as if they would have shivered into innumerable splinters! While I considered this scene with equal terror and astonishment, one of the main braces broke, by the shock whereof two sailors were flung from the yards arm into the sea, where they perished, and poor Jack Rattlin

thrown

thrown down upon the deck, at the expence of a broken leg. Morgan and I ran immediately to his aſſiſtance, and found a ſplinter of the ſhin bone thruſt by the violence of the fall through the ſkin: As this was a caſe of too great conſequence to be treated without the authority of the doctor, I went down to his cabin to inform him of the accident, as well as to bring up dreſſings, which we always kept ready prepared.—I entered his apartment without any ceremony, and by the glimmering of a lamp, perceived him on his knees, before ſomething that very much reſembled a crucifix; but this I will not inſiſt upon, that I may not ſeem too much a ſlave to common report, which indeed aſſiſted my conjecture on this occaſion, by repreſenting Dr. Mackſhane as a member of the church of Rome.—Be this as it will, he got up in a ſort of confuſion, occaſioned (I ſuppoſe) by his being diſturbed in his devotion, and in a trice, ſnatched the ſubject of my ſuſpicion from my ſight.—After making an apology for my intruſion, I acquainted him with the ſituation of Rattlin, but could by no means prevail upon him to viſit him on deck where he lay; he bade me deſire the boatſwain to order ſome of the men to carry him down to the cockpit, and in the mean time (ſaid he) I will direct Thompſon to get ready the dreſſings. When I ſignified to the boatſwain the doctor's deſire, he ſwore a terrible oath, that he could not ſpare one man from the deck, becauſe he expected the maſt would go by the board every minute.—This piece of information did not at all contribute to my peace of mind; however, as my friend Rattlin complained very much, with the aſſiſtance of Morgan, I ſupported him to the lower deck, whither Mr. Mackſhane, after much intreaty, ventured to come, attended by Thompſon with a box full of dreſſings, and his own ſervant, who carried a whole ſet of capital inſtruments. He examined the fracture and the wound, and concluding from a livid colour extending itſelf upon the limb, that a mortification would enſue, reſolved to amputate the leg immediately. This was a dreadful ſentence to
the

the patient, who, recruiting himſelf with a quid of tobacco, pronounced with a woeful countenance, " What! is there no remedy, doctor?—muſt I be dock'd! can't you ſplice it?"—Aſſuredly, doctor Mackſhane (ſaid the firſt mate) with ſubmiſſion and deference, and veneration to your ſuperior abilities, and opportunities, and ſtations (look you) I do apprehend, and conjecture, and aver, that there is no occaſion nor neceſſity to ſmite off this poor man's leg."—" God Almighty bleſs you, dear Welchman! (cried Rattlin) may you have fair wind and weather whereſoever you're bound, and come to an anchor in the road of heaven at laſt."—Mackſhane, very much incenſed at his mate's differing in opinion from him ſo openly, anſwered, that he was not bound to give an account of his practice to him; and in a peremptory tone, ordered him to apply the tourniquet. At the ſight of which, Jack ſtarting up, cried, " Avaſt, avaſt! d—n my heart, if you clap your nippers on me, till I know wherefore!—Mr. Random, won't you lend a hand towards ſaving my precious limb? Odd's heart, if lieutenant Bowling was here, he would not ſuffer Jack Rattlin's leg to be chopped off like a piece of old junk."——This pathetic addreſs to me, joined to my inclination to ſerve my honeſt friend, and the reaſons I had to believe there was no danger in delaying the amputation, induced me to declare myſelf of the firſt mate's opinion, and affirm that the preternatural colour of the ſkin was owing to an inflammation occaſioned by a contuſion, and common in all ſuch caſes, without any indication of an approaching gangrene. Morgan, who had a great opinion of my ſkill, manifeſtly exulted in my fellowſhip, and aſked Thompſon's ſentiments of the matter, in hopes of ſtrengthening our aſſociation with him too: but he, being of a meek diſpoſition, and either dreading the enmity of the ſurgeon, or ſpeaking the dictates of his own judgment, in a modeſt manner, eſpouſed the opinion of Mackſhane, who by this time, having conſulted with himſelf, determined to act in ſuch a manner, as to ſcreen himſelf from cenſure

and at the ſame time revenge himſelf on us, for our arrogance in contradicting him—With this view, he aſked, if we would undertake to cure the leg at our peril; that is, be anſwerable for the conſequence.—To this queſtion Morgan replied, that the lives of his creatures are in the hands of Got alone; and it would be great preſumption in him to undertake for an event that was in the power of his Maker, no more than the doctor could promiſe to cure all the ſick to whom he adminiſtered his aſſiſtance; but if the patient would put himſelf under our direction, we would do our endeavour to bring his diſtemper to a favourable iſſue, to which, at preſent, we ſaw no obſtruction.——I ſignified my concurrence; and Rattlin was ſo overjoyed, that ſhaking us both by the hands, he ſwore no body elſe ſhould touch him, and if he died, his blood ſhould be upon his own head.—Mr. Mackſhane, flattering himſelf with the proſpect of our miſcarriage, went away, and left us to manage it as we ſhould think proper; accordingly, having ſawed off part of the ſplinter that ſtuck through the ſkin, we reduced the fracture, dreſſed the wound, applyed the eighteen-tailed bandage, and put the leg in a box, *ſecundum artem*. Every thing ſucceeded according to our wiſh, and we had the ſatisfaction of not only preſerving the poor fellow's leg, but likewiſe of rendering the doctor contemptible among the ſhip's company, who had all their eyes on us during the courſe of this cure, which was compleated in ſix weeks.

THE TANJORE MAHARAJA SERFOJI'S SARASWATI MAHAL

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIX.

Mackshane's Malice—I am taken up and imprisoned for a Spy—Morgan meets with the same Fate—Thompson is tampered with to turn Evidence against us—Disdains the Proposal, and is maltreated for his Integrity—Morgan is released to assist the Surgeon during an Engagement with some French Ships of War—I remain fettered on the Poop, exposed to the Enemy's Shot, and grow delirious with Fear—Am comforted after the Battle by Morgan, who speaks freely of the Captain; is over-heard by the Centinel, who informs against him, and again imprisoned—Thompson grows Desperate, and notwithstanding the Remonstrances of Morgan and me, goes overboard in the Night.

IN the mean time, the storm subsided into a brisk gale, that carried us into the warm latitudes, where the weather became intolerable, and the crew very sickly. The doctor left nothing unattempted towards the completion of his vengeance against the Welchman and me. He went among the sick, under pretence of enquiring into their grievances, with a view of picking up complaints to our prejudice; but finding himself frustrated in that expectation by the good will we had procured from the patients, by our diligence and humanity, he took the resolution of listening to our conversation, by hiding himself behind the canvas that surrounded our birth; here too he was detected by the boy of our mess, who acquainted us with this piece of behaviour; and one night, while we were picking a large bone of salt beef, Morgan discerned something stir on the outside of our hangings, which immediately interpreting to be the doctor, he tipt me the wink, and pointed to the place, where I could perceive somebody standing; upon which, I snatched up the bone, and levelled it with all my force at him, saying, "Whoever you are, take that

for your curiofity."—It had the defired effect, for we heard the liftener tumble down, and afterwards crawl to his own cabin.—I applauded myfelf much for this feat, which turned out one of the moft unlucky exploits of my life, Mackfhane from that time marking me out for deftruction.—About a week after this exploit, as I was going my rounds among the fick, I was taken prifoner, and carried to the poop by the mafter at arms, where I was loaded with irons, and ftapled to the deck, on pretence that I was a fpy on board, and had confpired againft the captain's life.—How ridiculous foever this imputation was, I did not fail to fuffer by it all the rigour that could be fhewn to the worft of criminals, being expofed in this miferable condition to the fcorching heat of the fun by day, and the unwholefome damps by night, during the fpace of twelve days, in which I was neither brought to trial, nor examined touching the probability of my charge.—I had no fooner recovered the ufe of my reflection, which had been quite overthrown by this accident, than I fent for Thompfon, who, after condoling me on the occafion, hinted, that I owed this misfortune to the hatred of the doctor, who had given an information againft me to the captain, in confequence of which I was arrefted, and all my papers feized.—While I was curfing my capricious fate, I faw Morgan afcend the poop, guarded by two corporals, who made him fit down by me, that he might be pinioned in the fame machine.—Notwithftanding my fituation, I could fcarce refrain from laughing at the countenance of my fellow prifoner, who, without fpeaking one word, allowed his feet to be inclofed in the rings provided for that purpofe; but when they pretended to faften him on his back, he grew outrageous, and drawing a large couteau from his fide pocket, threated to rip up the belly of the firft man that fhould approach him, in order to treat him in fuch an unworthy manner.—They were preparing to ufe him very roughly, when the lieutenant on the quarter deck, called up to them to let him remain as he was.—He then crept towards me, and taking me by the hand,

hand, bade me "put my truſt in Cot."—And looking at Thompſon, who ſat by us trembling, with a pale viſage, told him there were two more rings for his feet, and he ſhould be glad to find him in ſuch good company.—But it was not the intention of our adverſary to include the ſecond mate in our fate: Him he excepted to be his drudge in attending the ſick, and, if poſſible, his evidence againſt us: With this view he founded him afar off, but finding his integrity incorruptible, harraſſed him ſo much out of ſpite, that in a ſhort time this mild creature grew weary of his life.

While I and my fellow priſoner comforted each other in our tribulation, the Admiral diſcovered four ſail to leeward, and made ſignal for our ſhip and four more to chace: Hereupon every thing was cleared for an engagement, and Mackſhane foreſeeing he ſhould have occaſion for more aſſiſtants than one, obtained Morgan's liberty; while I was left in this deplorable poſture to the chance of battle.—It was almoſt dark when we came up with the ſternmoſt chace, which we hailed, and inquired who they were; they gave us to underſtand they were French men of war, upon which Captain Oakum deſired them to ſend their boat on board of him; but they refuſed, telling him if he had any buſineſs with them, to come on board of their ſhip: He then threatened to pour in a broadſide upon them, which they promiſed to return.—Both ſides were as good as their word, and the engagement began with great fury.—The reader may gueſs how I paſſed my time, lying in this helpleſs ſituation, amidſt the terrors of a ſea-fight; expecting every moment to be cut aſunder or daſhed in pieces by the enemy's ſhot! I endeavoured to compoſe myſelf as much as poſſible, by reflecting that I was not a whit more expoſed than thoſe who were ſtationed about me; but when I beheld them employed without intermiſſion in annoying the foe, and encouraged by the ſociety and behaviour of one another, I could eaſily perceive a wide difference between their condition and mine: However, I concealed my agitation as well as I could, till the head

of the officer of marines who ſtood near me, being ſhot off, bounced from the deck athwart my face leaving me well nigh blinded with brains.—I could contain myſelf no longer, but began to bellow with all the ſtrength of my lungs: when a drummer coming towards me, aſked if I was wounded, and before I could anſwer, received a great ſhot in his belly, which tore out his entrails, and he fell flat on my breaſt.—This accident entirely bereft me of all diſcretion: I redoubled my cries, which were drowned in the noiſe of the battle; and finding myſelf diſregarded, loſt all patience and became frantic: I vented my rage in oaths and execrations, till my ſpirits being quite exhauſted, I remained quiet, and inſenſible of the load which oppreſſed me.—The engagement laſted till broad day, when Captain Oakum, finding he was like to gain neither honour nor advantage, by the affair, pretended to be undeceived by ſeeing their colours; and hailing the ſhip with whom he had fought all night, proteſted he believed them Spaniards, and the guns being ſilenced on each ſide, ordered the barge to be hoiſted out, and went on board of the French commodore. —Our loſs amounted to ten killed, and eighteen wounded, moſt part of whom afterwards died.—My fellow-mates had no ſooner diſpatched their buſineſs in the cock-pit, than, full of friendly concern, they came to viſit me.—Morgan aſcending firſt, and ſeeing my face almoſt covered with brains and blood, concluded I was no longer a man for this world; and calling to Thompſon with great emotion, bade him come up, and take his laſt farewell of his comrade and countryman, who was poſting to a petter place, where there were no Mackſhanes nor Oakums to aſperſe and torment him.—"No, (ſaid he, taking me by the hand) you are going to a country where there is more reſpect ſhewn to unfortunate ſhentlemen, and where you will have the ſatisfaction of peholding your adverſaries toſſing upon pillows of purning primſtone."--Thompſon, alarmed at this apoſtrophe, made haſte to the place where I lay, and ſitting down by me, with tears in his eyes, inquired into the nature of

of my calamity,—By this time I had recollected myſelf ſo far as to be able to converſe rationally with my friends, whom, to their great ſatisfaction, I immediately undeceived with regard to their apprehenſion of my being mortally wounded.—After I had got myſelf diſengaged from the carnage in which I wallowed, and partaken of a refreſhment which my friends brought along with them, we entered into diſcourſe upon the hardſhips we ſuſtained, and ſpoke very freely of the authors of our miſery: but our diſcourſe being overheard by the centinel who guarded me, he was no ſooner relieved, than he reported to the captain every ſyllable of our converſation, according to the orders he had received: The effect of this information ſoon appeared in the arrival of the maſters at arms, who replaced Morgan in his former ſtation; and gave the ſecond mate a caution to keep a ſtrict guard over his tongue, if he did not chooſe to accompany us in our confinement. Thompſon foreſeeing that the whole ſlavery of attending the ſick and wounded as well as the cruelty of Mackſhane, muſt now fall upon his ſhoulders, grew deſperate at the proſpect, and though I never heard him ſwear before, imprecated dreadful curſes on the heads of his oppreſſors, declaring that he would rather quit life altogether, than be much longer under the power of ſuch barbarians.—I was not a little ſtartled at his vivacity, and endeavoured to alleviate his complaints, by repreſenting the ſubject of my own, with as much aggravation as it would bear, by which compariſon he might ſee the balance of misfortune lay on my ſide, and take an example from me of fortitude and ſubmiſſion, till ſuch time as we could procure redreſs, which I hoped was not far off, conſidering, that we ſhould probably be in a harbour in leſs than three days, where we ſhould have an opportunity of preferring our complaints to the Admiral.—The Welchman joined in my remonſtrances, and was at great pains to demonſtrate, that it was every man's duty, as well as intereſt, to reſign himſelf to the divine will, and look upon himſelf as a centinel upon duty, who is by no means at liberty to leave

leave his post before he is relieved.—Thompson listened attentively to what we said, and at last, shedding a flood of tears, shook his head, and left us without making any reply.—About eleven at night he came to see us again, with a settled gloom on his countenance, and gave us to understand, that he had undergone excessive toil since he saw us, and in recompence, had been grossly abused by the doctor, who taxed him with being confederate with us, in a design of taking away his life and that of the captain. After some time spent in mutual exhortation, he got up, and squeezing me by the hand with an uncommon fervour, cried, "God bless you both;" and left us to wonder at his singular manner of parting with us, which did not fail to make an impression on us both.

Next morning, when the hour of visitation came round, this unhappy young man was missing, and after strict search, supposed to have gone over-board in the night; and this was certainly the case.

CHAP. XXX.

We lament the Fate of our Companion——The Captain offers Morgan his Liberty, which he refuses to accept——We are brought before him and examined——Morgan is sent back into Custody, whither also I am remanded, after a curious Trial.

THE news of this event affected my fellow prisoner and me extremely, as our unfortunate companion had justly acquired, by his amiable disposition, the love and esteem of us both; and the more we regretted his untimely fate, the greater horror we conceived for the villain, who was undoubtedly the occasion of it.—This abandoned miscreant did not discover the least symptom of concern for Thompson's death, although he must have been conscious to himself of having driven him by ill usage to that fatal resolution; but desired the captain to set Morgan at liberty again to look after the patients. Accordingly, one of the corporals was sent up to unfetter him; and he protested he would not be released until

he ſhould know for what he was confined; nor would he be a tennis ball, nor a ſhuttle-cock, nor a trudge, nor a ſcullion to any captain under the ſun. Oakum finding him obſtinate, and fearing it would not be in his power to exerciſe his tyranny much longer with impunity, was willing to ſhew ſome appearance of juſtice, and therefore ordered us both to be brought before him on the quarter-deck, where he ſat in ſtate, with his clerk on one ſide, and his counſellor Mackſhane on the other.—When we approached, he honoured us with this ſalutation: "So, gentlemen, damn my blood! many a captain in the navy would have ordered you both to be tuck'd up to the yard arm, without either judge or jury, for the crimes you have been guilty of; but damn my blood, I have too much good-nature, in allowing ſuch dogs as you to make your defence."—"Captain Oakum (ſaid my fellow ſufferer) certainly it is in your power (Got help the while) to tuck us all up at your will, and deſire, and pleaſure.——And perhaps it would be petter for ſome of us to be tucked up, than undergo the miſeries to which we have been expoſed. So may the farmer hang his kids for his diverſion, and amuſement, and mirth; but there is ſuch a thing as juſtice, if not upon earth, ſurely in heaven, that will puniſh with fire and primſtone all thoſe who take away the lives of innocent people out of wantonneſs and parparity (look you)—In the mean time, I ſhall be glad to know the crimes laid to my charge, and ſee the perſon who accuſes me."—"That you ſhall, (ſaid the captain;) here, doctor, what have you to ſay?"—Mackſhane ſtepping forward, hemmed a good while, in order to clear his throat; and before he began, Morgan accoſted him thus: "Doctor Mackſhane, look in my face—look in the face of an honeſt man, who abhors a falſe witneſs as he abhors the tevil, and Got be judge between you and me."—The doctor not minding this conjuration, made the following ſpeech, as near as I can remember:—"I'll tell you what, Mr. Morgan, to be ſure what you ſay is juſt, in regard to an honeſt man, and if ſo be it appears as how you are an honeſt

neſt man, then it is my opinion, that you deſerve to be acquitted, in relation to that there affair: for I tell you what, captain Oakum is reſolved for to do every body juſtice.—As for my own part, all that I have to alledge, is, that I have been informed you have ſpoken diſreſpectful words againſt your captain, who, to be ſure, is the moſt honourable and generous commander in the king's ſervice, without aſparagement or acceptation of man, woman, or child."

Having uttered this elegant harangue, on which he ſeemed to plume himſelf, Morgan replied, "I do partly gueſs, and conceive, and underſtand your meaning, which I wiſh could be more explicit: But, however, I do ſuppoſe, I am not to be condemned upon bare hearſay; or if I am convicted of ſpeaking diſreſpectfully of captain Oakum, I hope there is no treaſon in my words."—"But there's mutiny, by God, and that's death by the articles of war, (cried Oakum)—In the mean time, let the witneſſes be called."—Hereupon Mackſhane's ſervant appeared, and the boy of our meſs, whom they had ſeduced and tutored for the purpoſe—The firſt declared, that Morgan, as he deſcended the cock-pit ladder, one day, curſed the captain, and called him a ſavage beaſt, ſaying, he ought to be hunted down as an enemy to mankind.—"This (ſaid the clerk) is a ſtrong preſumption of a deſign formed againſt the captain's life.—For why? It pre-ſuppoſes malice afore-thought, and a criminal intention *a priori.*"——"Right (ſaid the captain to this miſerable grub, who had been an attorney's boy) you ſhall have law enough, here's Cook and Littlejohn for it."—This evidence was confirmed by the boy, who affirmed, he heard the firſt mate ſay, that the captain had no more bowels than a bear, and the ſurgeon had no more brains than an aſs.—Then the centinel who heard our diſcourſe on the poop was examined, and informed the court that the Welchman aſſured me, Captain Oakum, and Doctor Mackſhane would toſs upon billows of burning brimſtone in hell for their barbarity.—The clerk obſerved, that

that there was an evident prejudication, which confirmed the former ſuſpicion of a conſpiracy againſt the life of Captain Oakum; for, becauſe, how could Morgan ſo poſitively pronounce that the captain and ſurgeon would be damned, unleſs he had an intention to make away with them before they could have time to repent?—This ſage explanation had a great weight with our noble commander who exclaimed, "What have you to ſay to this, Taffy? you ſeem to be taken all a-back, brother, ha!"—Morgan was too much of a gentleman to diſown the text, although he abſolutely denied the truth of the comment: Upon which the captain, ſtrutting up to him, with a ferocious countenance, ſaid, "So, Mr. ſon of a bitch, you confeſs you honoured me with the names of bear and beaſt, and pronounced my damnation!—Damn my heart! I have a good mind to have you brought to a court-martial and hanged, you dog." —Here, Mackſhane, having occaſion for an aſſiſtant, interpoſed, and begged the captain to pardon Mr. Morgan, with his wonted goodneſs, upon condition that he, the delinquent, ſhould make ſuch ſubmiſſion as the nature of his miſdemeanor demanded.—Upon which the Cambro Britain, who, on this occaſion would have made no ſubmiſſion to the Great Mogul, ſurrounded by his guards, thanked the doctor for his mediation, and acknowledged himſelf in the wrong for calling the image of God a peaſt, "but (ſaid he) I ſpoke by metaphor and parable, and compariſon, and types; as we ſignify meekneſs by a lamb, letchery by a goat, and craftineſs by a fox; ſo we liken ignorance to an aſs, and brutality to a bear, and fury to a tyger; therefore I made uſe of theſe ſimilies to expreſs my ſentiments (look you) and what I ſaid before Got, I will not unſay before man or peaſt neither."—Oakum was ſo provoked at this inſolence (as he termed it) that he ordered him forthwith to be carried to the place of his confinement, and his clerk to proceed on the examination of me. —The firſt queſtion put to me, was touching the place of my nativity, which I declared to be the north of Scotland.—

"The

"The north of Ireland more like, (cried the captain) but we ſhall bring you up preſently."—He then aſked what religion I profeſſed; and when I anſwered, "The proteſtant," ſwore I was as arrant a Roman as ever went to maſs.—"Come, come, clerk, (continued he) catechiſe him a little on this ſubject.—But before I relate the particulars of the clerk's enquiries, it will not be amiſs to inform the reader, that our commander himſelf was an Hibernian, and, if not ſhrewdly belied, a Roman Catholic to boot.——"You ſay you are a proteſtant, (ſaid the clerk) make the ſign of the croſs with your fingers, ſo, and ſwear upon it to that affirmation."——When I was about to perform this ceremony, the captain cried with ſome emotion, "No, no, damme! I'll have no profanation, neither.—But go on with your interrogations."—"Well then, (proceeded my examiner) how many ſacraments are there?"—To which I replied, "Two."—"What are they?" (ſaid he) I anſwered, "Baptiſm and the Lord's Supper."—"And ſo you would explode confirmation and marriage altogether! (ſaid Oakum) I thought this fellow was a rank Roman." The clerk, though he was bred under an attorney, could not refrain from bluſhing at this blunder, which he endeavoured to conceal, by obſerving that theſe decoys would not do with me who ſeemed to be an old offender.—He went on with aſking, if I believed in tranſubſtantiation; but I treated the notion of a real preſence with ſuch diſreſpect, that his patron was ſcandalized at my impiety, and commanded him to proceed to the plot.—Whereupon this miſerable pettifogger told me, there was great reaſon to ſuſpect me of being a ſpy on board; and that I had entered into a conſpiracy with Thompſon and others not yet detected, againſt the life of Captain Oakum.—Which accuſation they pretended to ſupport by the evidence of our boy, who declared he had often heard the deceaſed Thompſon and me whiſpering together, and could diſtinguiſh the words, "Oakum, raſcal, poiſon, piſtol." By which expreſſions it appeared, we did intend to uſe ſiniſter means to

accompliſh

accompliſh his deſtruction. That the death of Thompſon ſeemed to confirm this conjecture, who either feeling the ſtings of remorſe, for being engaged in ſuch a horrid confederacy, or fearing a diſcovery, by which he muſt have infallibly ſuffered an ignominious death, had put a fatal period to his own exiſtence.—But what eſtabliſhed the truth of the whole, was a book in cyphers found among my papers, which exactly tallied with one found in his cheſt, after his diſappearance. This, he obſerved was a preſumption very near proof poſitive, and would determine any jury in Chriſtendom to find me guilty.—In my own defence, I alledged, that I had been dragged on board at firſt very much againſt my inclination, as I could prove by the evidence of ſome people now in the ſhip, conſequently could have no deſign of becoming a ſpy at that time; and ever ſince had been entirely out of the reach of any correſpondence that could juſtly entail that ſuſpicion upon me.—As for conſpiring againſt my captain's life, it could not be ſuppoſed that any man in his right wits would harbour the leaſt thought of ſuch an undertaking, which he could not poſſibly perform without certain infamy and ruin to himſelf, even if he had all the inclination in the world.—That allowing the boy's evidence to be true (which I affirmed was falſe and malicious) nothing concluſive could be gathered from a few incoherent words. Neither was the fate of Mr. Thompſon a circumſtance more favourable for the charge; for I had in my pocket a letter which too well explained that myſtery, in a very different manner from that which was ſuppoſed. With theſe words I produced the following letter, which Jack Rattlin brought to me the very day after Thompſon diſappeared; and told me it was committed to his care by the deceaſed, who made him promiſe not to deliver it ſooner. The clerk taking it out of my hand, read aloud the contents, which were theſe:

"*Dear Friend.*

"I AM ſo much oppreſſed with the fatigue I daily and nightly undergo, and the barbarous uſage of Dr. Mackſhane, who is bent on your deſtruction as well as

mine, that I am resolved to free myself from this miserable life, and before you receive this shall be no more. I could have wished to die in your good opinion, which I am afraid I shall forfeit by the last act of my life; but if you cannot acquit me, I know you will at least preserve some regard for the memory of an unfortunate young man who loved you—I recommend it to you, to beware of Mackshane, whose revenge is implacable.—I wish all prosperity to you and Mr. Morgan, to whom pray offer my last respects, and beg to be remembered as your unhappy friend and countryman,

William Thompson."

This letter was no sooner read, than Mackshane, in a transport of rage, snatched it out of the clerk's hands, and tore it into a thousand pieces, saying, it was a villainous forgery, contrived and executed by myself.—The captain and clerk declared themselves of the same opinion, although I insisted on having the remains of it compared with other writings of Thompson, which they had in their possession. I was ordered to answer the last article of my accusation, namely, the book of cyphers found among my papers.—"That is easily done, (said I.) What you are pleased to call cyphers are no other than the Greek characters, in which, for my amusement, I kept a diary of every thing remarkable that has occurred to my observation since the beginning of the voyage, till the day on which I was put in irons; and the same method was practised by Mr. Thompson, who copied mine."—"A very likely story! (cried Mackshane.) What occasion was there for using Greek characters, if you were not afraid of discovering what you had wrote?——But what d'ye talk of Greek characters?—D'ye think I am so ignorant of the Greek language, as not to distinguish its letters from these, which are no more Greek than Chinese? No, no; I will not give up my knowledge of the Greek for you, nor none that ever came from your country." So saying, with an unparalled effrontery, he repeated some gibberish, which by the sound seemed to be Irish, and made it

it paſs for Greek with the captain, who looking at me with a contemptuous ſneer, exclaimed, " Ah, ah, ! have you caught a Tartar ?" I could not help ſmiling at the conſummate aſſurance of this Hibernian, and offered to refer the diſpute to any body on board who underſtood the Greek alphabet: Upon which Morgan was brought back, and being made acquainted with the affair, took the book, and read a whole page in Engliſh, without heſitation, deciding the controverſy in my favour.——The doctor was ſo far from being out of countenance at this detection, that he affirmed, Morgan was in the ſecret, and repeated from his own invention. Oakum ſaid, "Aye, aye, I ſee they are both in a ſtory:" And diſmiſſed my fellow mate to his cock-loft, although I propoſed that he and I ſhould read and tranſlate ſeparately, any chapter or verſe in the Greek teſtament in his poſſeſſion, by which it would appear whether we or the ſurgeon ſpoke truth.——Not being endued with eloquence enough to convince the captain that there could be no juggle nor confederacy in this expedient, I begged to be examined by ſome unconcerned perſon on board, who underſtood Greek. Accordingly the whole ſhip's company, officers and all, were called upon deck, among whom it was proclaimed, that if any of them could ſpeak Greek, he or they ſo qualified ſhould aſcend the quarter-deck immediately.——After ſome pauſe, two fore-maſt men came up, and profeſſed their ſkill in that language, which (they ſaid) they acquired during ſeveral voyages to the Levant, among the Greeks of the Morea. The captain exulted much in this declaration, and put my journal-book into the hands of one of them, who candidly owned he could neither read nor write: the other acknowledged the ſame degree of ignorance, but pretended to ſpeak the Greek lingo with any man on board; and addreſſing himſelf to me, pronounced ſome ſentences of a barbarous corrupted language, which I did not underſtand.—I aſſerted, that the modern Greek was as different from that ſpoke and written by the ancients, as the Engliſh uſed now from the old Saxon ſpoke in the time of Hengiſt; and as I had only learned the true original

original tongue, in which Homer, Pindar, the Evangelifts, and other great men of antiquity wrote, it could not be fuppofed that I fhould know any thing of an imperfect Gothic dialect, that rofe on the ruins of the former, and fcarce retained any traces of the old expreffion.——But if doctor Mackfhane, who pretended to be mafter of the Greek language, could maintain a converfation with thefe feamen, I would retract what I had faid, and be content to fuffer any punifhment he fhould think proper to inflict.—I had no fooner uttered thefe words, than the furgeon, knowing one of thefe fellows to be his countryman, accofted him in Irifh, and was anfwered in the fame brogue; when a dialogue enfued between them, which they affirmed to be in Greek, after having fecured fecrecy of the other tar, who had his cue in the language of the Morea from his companion, before they would venture to affert fuch an intrepid falfehood.—"I thought (faid Oakum) we fhould difcover the impofture at laft.—Let the rafcal be carried back to his confinement.—I find he muft dangle."——Having nothing further to urge in my own behalf, before a court fo prejudiced with fpite, and fortified with ignorance againft truth, I fuffered myfelf to be re-conducted peaceably to my fellow prifoner, who, hearing the particulars of my trial, lifted up his hands and eyes to Heaven, and uttered a dreadful groan: and not daring to difburden his thoughts to me by fpeech, left he might be overheard by the centinel, burft forth into a Welch fong, which he accompanied with a thoufand contortions of face, and violent geftures of body.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXI.

I discover a Subornation against me, by means of a Quarrel between Two of the Evidences; in consequence of which, I am set at Liberty, and prevail upon Morgan to accept of his Freedom on the same Terms—Mackshane's Malice—We arrive at Jamaica, from whence in a short Time we beat up to Hispaniola, in conjunction with the West India Squadron—We take in Water, Sail again, and arrive at Carthagena—Reflections on our Conduct there.

MEAN while, a quarrel happening between the two modern Greeks, the one, to be revenged of the other, came and discovered to us the mystery of Mackshane's dialogue, as I have explained it above. This detection coming to the ears of the doctor, who was sensible, that (now we were in sight of Jamaica;) we should have an opportunity of clearing ourselves before a court-martial, and, at the same time, of making his malice and ignorance conspicuous, he interceded for us with the captain so effectually, that in a few hours we were set at liberty, and ordered to return to our duty.—This was a happy event for me, my whole body being blistered by the sun, and my limbs benumbed by want of motion: But I could scarce persuade the Welchman to accept of this indulgence, he persisting in his obstinacy to remain in irons until he should be discharged by a court-martial, which he believed would also do him justice on his enemies. At length I represented to him the precarious issue of a trial, the power and interest of his adversaries, and flattered his revenge with the hope of wreaking his resentment with his own hands upon Mackshane after our return to England. This last argument had more weight with him than all the rest, and prevailed upon him to repair with me to the cockpit, which I no sooner entered, than the idea of my departed friend presented itself to my remembrance, and filled my eyes with tears.—We discharged from our mess the boy who had acted so perfidiously, notwithstanding his tears, entrea-

ties, and profeſſions of penitence for what he had done; but not before he had confeſſed that the ſurgeon had bribed him to give evidence againſt us, with a pair of ſtockings, and a couple of old check ſhirts, of which his ſervant had ſince plundered him.

The keys of our cheſts and lockers being ſent to us by the doctor, we detained the meſſenger until we had examined the contents; and my fellow mate, finding all his Cheſhire cheeſe conſumed to a cruſt, his brandy exhauſted, and his onions gone, was ſeized with a fit of choler, which he diſcharged on Mackſhane's man in oaths and execrations, threatening to proſecute him as a thief.———The fellow ſwore in his turn, that he never had the keys in his poſſeſſion till that time, when he received them from his maſter, with orders to deliver them to us.—"As Got is my judge, (cried Morgan,) and my ſalfation, and my witneſs, whoſoever has pilfered my proviſions, is a louſy, peggarly, raſcally knave! and by the ſoul of my grandſire! I will impeach, and accuſe, and indict him of a roppery, if I did but know who he is."——Had this misfortune happened at ſea, where we could not repair the loſs, in all probability this deſcendant of Caractacus would have loſt his wits entirely; but when I obſerved, how eaſy it would be to remedy this paltry miſchance, he became more calm, and reconciled himſelf to the occaſion——A little while after this tranſport, the ſurgeon came into the birth, under pretence of taking ſomething out of the medicine cheſt; and, with a ſmiling aſpect, wiſhed us joy of our deliverence, which (he ſaid, he had been at great pains to obtain of the captain, who was very juſtly incenſed at our behaviour; but he (the doctor) had paſſed his word for our future conduct, and he hoped we ſhould give him no cauſe to repent of his kindneſs. —He expected (no doubt) an acknowledgment from us for this pretended piece of ſervice, as well as a general amneſty of what was paſt; but he had to do with people who were not quite ſo apt to forgive injuries as he imagined or to forget that, if our deliverance was owing to his mediation, our calamity was occaſioned by his malice.

I there-

I therefore sat silent, while my companion answered, "Aye, Aye, 'tis no matter—Got knows the heart—There is a time for all things, as the wise man saith; there is a time for throwing away stones, and a time to gather them up again."—He seemed to be disconcerted at this reply, and went away in a pet, muttering something about "Ingratitude" and "Fellows," of which we did not think fit to take any notice.

Our fleet having joined another that waited for us, lay at anchor about a month in the harbour at Port-Royal, in Jamaica, during which time something of consequence was certainly transacted; notwithstanding the insinuations of some, who affirmed we had no business at all in that place—that in order to take the advantage of the season proper for our enterprise, the West India squadron, which had previous notice of our coming, ought to have joined us at the west end of Hispaniola, with necessary stores and refreshments, from whence we could have sailed directly for Carthagena, before the enemy could put themselves in a good posture of defence, or, indeed, have an inkling of our design. Be this as it will, we sailed from Jamaica, and in ten days or a fortnight, beat up against the wind as far as the isle of Vache, with an intention, as was said, to attack the French fleet, then supposed to be lying near that place; but before we arrived, they had sailed for Europe, having first dispatched an advice-boat to Carthagena, with an account of our being in those seas, as also of our strength and destination.—We loitered here some days longer, taking in wood and brackish-water, in the use whereof, however, our admiral seemed to consult the health of the men, by restricting each to a quart a day.—At length we set sail, and arrived in a bay to the windward of Carthagena, where we came to an anchor, and lay at our ease ten days longer.——Here again, certain malicious people take occasion to blame the conduct of their superiors, by saying, that in so doing, they not only unprofitably wasted time, which was very precious, considering the approach of the rainy season, but also allowed the Spaniards to recollect themselves

from

from the terror occaſioned by the approach of an Engliſh fleet, at leaſt three times as numerous as ever appeared in that part of the world before. But, if I might be allowed to give my opinion of the matter, I would aſcribe this delay to the generoſity of our chiefs, who ſcorned to take any advantage that fortune might give them, even over an enemy. At laſt, however, we weighed, and anchored again ſomewhat nearer the harbour's mouth, where we made ſhift to land our marines, who encamped on the beach, in deſpite of the enemy's ſhot, which knocked a good many of them on the head.—— This piece of conduct, in choosing a camp under the walls of an enemy's fortification, which I believe never happened before, was practiſed, I preſume, with a view of accuſtoming the ſoldiers to ſtand fire, who were not as yet much uſed to diſcipline, moſt of them having been taken from the plough-tail a few months before.—— This expedient again has furniſhed matters for cenſure againſt the miniſtry, for ſending a few raw recruits on ſuch an important enterpriſe, while ſo many veteran regiments lay inactive at home: but ſurely our governors had their reaſons for ſo doing, which poſſibly may be diſcloſed with other ſecrets of the deep. Perhaps they were loth to riſk their beſt troops on ſuch deſperate ſervice; or, the colonels and field officers of the old corps, who, generally ſpeaking, enjoyed their commiſſions as ſine-cures or penſions, for ſome domeſtic ſervice rendered to the court, refuſed to embark in ſuch a dangerous and precarious undertaking; for which refuſal, no doubt, they are to be much commended.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXII.

Our Land Forces being disembarked, erect a Fascine Battery—Our Ship is ordered, with Four more, to batter the Fort of Boca Chica—Mackshane's Cowardice—The Chaplain's phrenzy—Honest Rattlin loses one Hand—His Heroism, and Reflections on the Battle—Crampley's Behaviour to me during the Heat of the Fight.

OUR forces being landed and stationed as I have already mentioned, set about erecting a fascine battery to cannonade the principal fort of the enemy, and in something more than three weeks it was ready to open. That we might do the Spaniards as much honour as possible, it was determined, in a council of war, that five of our largest ships should attack the fort on one side, while the battery, strengthened by two mortars and twenty-four cohorns, should ply it on the other.

Accordingly, the signal for our ship to engage, among others, was hoisted, we being advertised the night before, to make every thing clear for that purpose; and in so doing, a difference happened between Captain Oakum and his well-beloved cousin and counsellor Mackshane, which had well nigh terminated in an open rupture.——The doctor, who had imagined there was no more danger of being hurt by the enemy's shot in the cockpit, than in the centre of the earth, was lately informed that a surgeon's mate had been killed in that part of a ship, by a cannon-ball from two small redoubts that were destroyed before the disembarkation of our soldiers; and therefore insisted upon having a platform raised, for the convenience of the sick and wounded, in the after-hold, where he deemed himself more secure than on the deck above. The captain, offended at this extraordinary proposal, accused him of pusillanimity, and told him, there was no room in the hold for such an occasion: or, if there was, he could not expect to be indulged more than the rest of the surgeons of the navy, who used the cockpit for that purpose. Fear rendering

dering Mackſhane obſtinate, he perſiſted in his demand, and ſhewed his inſtructions, by which it was authorized. The captain ſwore thoſe inſtructions were dictated by a parcel of lazy poltroons, who were never at ſea: nevertheleſs, he was obliged to comply, and ſent for the carpenter to give him orders about it: But before any ſuch meaſure could be taken, our ſignal was thrown out, the doctor was compelled to truſt his carcaſe in the cockpit, where Morgan and I were buſy in putting our inſtruments and dreſſings in order.

Our ſhip, with others deſtined for this ſervice, immediately weighed, and in leſs than half an hour came to an anchor before the caſtle of Boca Chica, with a ſpring upon our cable—and the cannonading (which indeed was terrible,) began. The ſurgeon, after having croſſed himſelf, fell flat on the deck; and the chaplain and purſer, who were ſtationed with us, in quality of aſſiſtants, followed his example; while the Welchman and I ſat upon a cheſt looking at one another with great diſcompoſure, ſcarce able to refrain from the like proſtration.—And that the reader may know it was not a common occaſion that alarmed us thus, I muſt inform him of the particulars of this dreadful din that aſtoniſhed us. The fire of the Spaniards proceeded from eighty-four great guns, beſide a mortar and ſmall arms, in Boca Chica, thirty-ſix in Fort St. Joſeph, twenty in two faſcine batteries, and four men of war, mounting ſixty-four guns each.—This was anſwered by our land battery, mounted with twenty-one cannon, two mortars, and twenty four cohorns, and five great ſhips of eighty or ſeventy guns, that fired without intermiſſion.—We had not been many minutes engaged, when one of the ſailors brought another on his back to the cockpit, where he toſſed him down like a bag of oats, and pulling out his pouch, put a large chew of tobacco in his mouth, without ſpeaking a word. Morgan immediately examined the condition of the wounded man, and cried out, "As I ſhall anſwer now, the man is tead as my great grandfather." ——"Dead! (ſaid his comrade:) he may be dead now, for aught I know; but I'll be damn'd if he was

not alive when I took him up."—So ſaying, he was about to return to his quarters, when I bade him carry the body along with him, and throw it over-board.——— "D—n the body! (ſaid he) I think 'tis fair enough if I take care of my own."—My fellow-mate, ſnatching up the amputation knife, purſued him half way up the cockpit ladder, crying, "You louſy raſcal, is this the church-yard, or the charnel-houſe, or the ſepulchre, or the golgotha of the ſhip?"—but was ſtopt in his career by one calling, "Yo, ho, avaſt there—Scaldings."— "Scaldings," (anſwered Morgan,) Got knows 'tis hot enough indeed:—Who are you?"—"Here's one," (replied the voice.) And I immediately knew it to be that of my honeſt friend, Jack Rattlin, who, coming towards me, told me, with great deliberation, he was come to be docked at laſt, and diſcovered the remains of one hand, which had been ſhattered to pieces with a grape ſhot.—I lamented with unfeigned ſorrow his misfortune, which he bore with heroic courage, obſerving, that every ſhot had its commiſſion: It was well it did not take him in the head; for, if it had, what then? he ſhould have died bravely, fighting for his king and country. Death was a debt which every man owed, and muſt pay: and that now was as well as another time.——I was much pleaſed and edified with the maxims of this ſea-philoſopher, who endured the amputation of his left hand without ſhrinking: the operation being performed (at his requeſt) by me, after Mackſhane, who was with difficulty prevailed to lift his head from the deck, had declared there was a neceſſity for his loſing the limb.— While I was employed in dreſſing the ſtump, I aſked Jack's opinion of the battle, who, ſhaking his head, frankly told me, he believed we ſhould do no good; "For why, becauſe, inſtead of dropping anchor cloſe under ſhore, where we ſhould have had to deal with one corner of Boca Chica only, we had opened the harbour, and expoſed ourſelves to the whole fire of the enemy from their ſhipping and Fort St. Joſeph, as well as from the caſtle we intended to cannonade; that beſides, we lay at too great a diſtance to damage the walls, and three parts in

in four of our ſhot did not take place: for there was ſcarce any body on board who underſtood the pointing of a gun.—Ah! God help us! (continued he) if your kinſman Lieutenant Bowling had been there, we ſhould have had other gueſs work."—By this time our patients had increaſed to ſuch a number, that we did not know which to begin with; and the firſt mate plainly told the ſurgeon, that if he did not get up immediately, and perform his duty, he would complain of his behaviour to the admiral, and make application for his warrant. This remonſtrance effectually rouſed Mackſhane, who was never deaf to an argument in which he thought his intereſt was concerned: he therefore roſe up, and, in order to ſtrengthen his reſolution, had recourſe more than once to a caſe-bottle of rum, which he freely communicated to the chaplain and purſer, who had as much need of ſuch extraordinary inſpiration as himſelf: being thus ſupported, he went to work, and arms and legs were hewed down without mercy.——The fumes of the liquor mounting into the parſon's brain, conſpired with his former agitation of ſpirits to make him quite delirious; he ſtript himſelf to the ſkin, and, beſmearing his body with blood, could ſcarce be with-held from running upon deck in that condition. Jack Rattlin, ſcandalized at this deportment, endeavoured to allay his tranſports with reaſon: but finding all he ſaid ineffectual and great confuſion occaſioned by his frolics, he knocked him down with his right hand, and by threats kept him quiet in that ſtate of humiliation.—But it was not in the power of rum to elevate the purſer, who ſat on the floor wringing his hands, and curſing the hour in which he left his peaceable profeſſion of a brewer in Rocheſter, to engage in ſuch a life of terror and diſquiet.——While we diverted ourſelves at the expence of this poor devil, a ſhot happened to take us between wind and water, and (its courſe being through the purſer's ſtore-room) made a terrible havock and noiſe among the jars and bottles in its way, and diſconcerted Mackſhane ſo much, that he dropt his ſcalpel, and falling down on his knees, pronounced his *pater-noſter* aloud; the purſer

fell

fell backward, and lay without ſenſe or motion; and the chaplain grew ſo outrageous, that Rattlin with one hand could not keep him under; ſo that we were obliged to confine him in the ſurgeon's cabin, where he was no doubt guilty of a thouſand extravagances.—Much about this time my old antagoniſt Crampley came down, with expreſs orders (as he ſaid) to bring me up to the quarter deck, to dreſs a ſlight wound the captain had received by a ſplinter; his reaſon for honouring me in particular with this piece of ſervice being, that, in caſe I ſhould be killed or diſabled by the way, my death or mutilation would be of leſs conſequence to the ſhip's company, than that of the doctor or his firſt mate.—At another time, perhaps, I might have diſputed this order, to which I was not bound to pay the leaſt regard; but as I thought my reputation depended upon my compliance, I was reſolved to convince my rival, that I was no more afraid than he of expoſing myſelf to danger.—With this view I provided myſelf with dreſſings, and followed him immediately to the quarter-deck, through a moſt infernal ſcene of ſlaughter, fire, ſmoke, and uproar! Captain Oakum, who leaned againſt the mizen-maſt, no ſooner ſaw me approach in my ſhirt, with the ſleeves tucked up to my arm-pits, and my hands dyed with blood, than he ſignified his diſpleaſure by a frown, and aſked why the doctor himſelf did not come? I told him Crampley had ſingled me out, as if by expreſs command; at which reply he ſeemed ſurpriſed, and threatened to puniſh the midſhipman for his preſumption after the engagement. In the mean time I was ſent back to my ſtation, and ordered to tell Mackſhane, that the captain expected him immediately.—I got ſafe back, and delivered my commiſſion to the doctor, who flatly refuſed to quit the poſt aſſigned to him by his inſtructions: whereupon Morgan, who (I believe) was jealous of my reputation for courage, undertook the affair, and aſcended with great intrepidity.—The captain, finding the ſurgeon obſtinate, ſuffered himſelf to be dreſſed, and ſwore he would confine Mackſhane as ſoon as the ſervice ſhould be over.

CHAP. XXXIII.

A Breach being made in the Walls, our Soldiers give the Assault, and take the Place without Opposition——Our Sailors at the same Time become Masters of all the other Strengths near Boca Chica, and take possession of the Harbour——The good consequence of this Success——We move nearer the Town—Find two Forts deserted, and the Channel blocked up with sunk Vessels; which however we find means to clear——Land our Soldiers at La Quinta—Repulse a Body of Militia——Attack the Castle of St. Lazar, and are forced to retreat with great Loss——The Remains of our Army are re-embarked——An Effort of the Admiral to take the Town——The Economy of our Expedition described.

HAVING cannonaded the fort during the space of four hours, we were all ordered to slip our cables, and sheer off: But next day the engagement was renewed, and continued from the morning till the afternoon, when the enemy's fire from Boca Chica slackened, and towards evening was quite silenced.—A breach being made on the other side, by our land battery, large enough to admit a middle-sized baboon, provided he could find means to climb up to it, our General proposed to give the assault that very night, and actually ordered a detachment on that duty. Providence stood our friend upon this occasion, and put it into the hearts of the Spaniards to abandon the fort, which might have been maintained by resolute men to the day of judgment against all the force we could exert in the attack.——And while our soldiers took possession of the enemy's ramparts, without resistance, the same good luck attended a body of sailors, who made themselves masters of Fort St. Joseph, the fascine batteries, and one Spanish man of war; the other three being burnt or sunk by the foe, that they might not fall into our hands.——The taking of these forts, in the strength of which the Spaniards chiefly confided, made us masters of the outward harbour, and occasioned great joy among us; as we laid our accounts with finding little or no opposition from the town: and, indeed, if a few great ships had sailed up immediately, before

before they had recovered from the confuſion and deſpair that our unexpected ſucceſs had produced among them, it is not impoſſible that we might have finiſhed the affair to our ſatisfaction, without any more bloodſhed; but this ſtep our heroes diſdained, as a barbarous inſult over the enemy's diſtreſs; and gave them all the reſpite they could deſire, in order to recollect themſelves.——In the mean time, Mackſhane, taking the advantage of this general exultation, waited on our captain, and pleaded his own cauſe ſo effectually, that he was re-eſtabliſhed in his good graces; and as for Crampley, there was no more notice taken of his behaviour towards me during the action.——But of all the conſequences of the victory, none was more grateful than plenty of freſh water, after we had languiſhed five weeks on the allowance of a purſer's quart *per diem* for each man, in the Torrid Zone, where the ſun was vertical, and the expence of bodily fluid ſo great, that a gallon of liquor could ſcarce ſupply the waſte of twenty-four hours; eſpecially as our proviſion conſiſted of putrid ſalt-beef, to which the ſailors gave the name of Iriſh horſe; ſalt-pork of New-England, which, though neither fiſh nor fleſh, ſavoured of both; bread from the ſame country, every biſcuit whereof, like a piece of clock-work, moved by its own internal impulſe, occaſioned by the myriads of inſects that dwelt within it; and butter ſerved out by the gill, that taſted like train oil thickened with ſalt. Inſtead of ſmall beer, each man was allowed three half quarterns of brandy or rum, which were diſtributed every morning, diluted with a certain quantity of his water, without either ſugar or fruit to render it palatable, for which reaſon, this compoſition was by the ſailors not unaptly ſtiled *neceſſity*. Nor was this limitation of ſimple element owing to a ſcarcity of it on board, for there was at this time water enough in the ſhip for a voyage of ſix-months, at the rate of half a gallon *per* day to each man: But this faſt muſt (I ſuppoſe) have been enjoined by way of penance on the ſhip's company for their ſins; or rather with a view to mortify them into a contempt of life, that they might thereby become more reſolute and regardleſs of

 danger.

danger. How ſimple then do thoſe people argue, who aſcribe the great mortality among us to our bad proviſion and want of water; and affirm, that a great many valuable lives might have been ſaved, if the uſeleſs tranſports had been employed in fetching freſh ſtock, turtle, fruit, and other refreſhments from Jamaica, and other adjacent iſlands, for the uſe of the army and fleet! ſeeing it is to be hoped, that thoſe who died went to a better place, and thoſe who ſurvived were the more eaſily maintained. After all, a ſufficient number remained to fall before the walls of St. Lazar, where they behaved like their own country maſtiffs, which ſhut their eyes, run into the jaws of a bear, and have their heads cruſhed for their valour.

But to return to my narration: After having put garriſons into the forts we had taken, and re-embarked our ſoldiers and artillery, a piece of ſervice that detained us more than a week, we ventured up to the mouth of the inner harbour, guarded by a large fortification on one ſide, and a ſmall redoubt on the other, both of which were deſerted before our approach, and the entrance of the harbour blocked up by ſeveral old galleons, and two men of war that the enemy had ſunk in the channel.—We made ſhift, however, to open a paſſage for ſome ſhips, that favoured a ſecond landing of our troops at a place called La Quinta, not far from the town, where, after a faint reſiſtance from a body of Spaniards, who oppoſed their diſembarkation, they encamped, with a deſign of beſieging the caſtle of St. Lazar, which overlooked and commanded the city. Whether our renowned general had nobody in his army who knew how to approach it in form, or that he truſted entirely to the fame of his arms, I ſhall not determine; but, certain it is, a reſolution was taken in a council of war, to attack the place with muſquetry only. This was put in execution, and ſucceeded accordingly; the enemy giving them ſuch a hearty reception, that the greateſt part of the detachment took up their everlaſting reſidence on the ſpot.—Our chief not reliſhing this kind of complaiſance in the Spaniards, was wiſe enough to

retreat

retreat on board, with the remains of his army, which, from eight thouſand able men, landed on the beach near Boca Chica, was now reduced to fifteen hundred fit for ſervice.——The ſick and wounded were ſqueezed into certain veſſels, which thence obtained the name of hoſpital ſhips, though methinks they ſcarce deſerved ſuch a creditable title, ſeeing few of them could boaſt of their ſurgeon, nurſe, or cook; and the ſpace between decks was ſo confined, that the miſerable patients had not room to ſit upright in their beds. Their wounds and ſtumps being neglected, contracted filth and putrefaction, and millions of maggots were hatched amidſt the corruption of their ſores. This inhuman diſregard was imputed to the ſcarcity of ſurgeons, though it is well known that every great ſhip in the fleet could have ſpared one at leaſt for this duty; an expedient which would have been more than ſufficient to remove this ſhocking inconvenience: But perhaps the general was too much of a gentleman to aſk a favour of this kind from his fellow chief, who, on the other hand, would not derogate ſo much from his own dignity, as to offer ſuch aſſiſtance unaſked; for I may venture to affirm, that by this time the Demon of Diſcord, with her ſooty wings, had breathed her influence upon our counſels; and it might be ſaid of theſe great men (I hope they will pardon the compariſon) as of Cæſar and Pompey, the one could not brook a ſuperior, and the other was impatient of an equal; ſo that, between the pride of one, and the inſolence of another, the enterpriſe miſcarried, according to the proverb, "Between two ſtools "the backſide falls to the ground."—Not that I would be thought to liken any public concern to that opprobrious part of the human body, though I might with truth aſſert, if I durſt uſe ſuch a vulgar idiom, that the nation did hang an a—ſe at its diſappointment on this occaſion: neither would I preſume to compare the capacity of our heroic leaders to any ſuch wooden convenience as a joint ſtool, or as a cloſe-ſtool; but only to ſignify by this ſimile, the miſtake the people committed

in truſting to the union of two inſtruments that were never joined.

A day or two after the attempt on St. Lazar, the admiral ordered one of the Spaniſh men of war we had taken to be mounted with ſixteen guns, and manned with detachments from our great ſhips, in order to batter the town: accordingly ſhe was towed into the inner harbour in the night, and moored within half a mile of the walls, againſt which ſhe began to fire at daybreak; and continued about ſix hours expoſed to the oppoſition of at leaſt thirty pieces of cannon, which at length obliged our men to ſet her on fire, and get off as well as they could in their boats.——This piece of conduct afforded matter of ſpeculation to all the wits either in the army or navy, who were at laſt fain to acknowledge it a ſtroke of policy above their comprehenſion.—Some entertained ſuch an irreverent opinion of the admiral's underſtanding, as to think he expected the town would ſurrender to his floating battery of ſixteen guns: others imagined his ſole intention was to try the enemy's ſtrength, by which he ſhould be able to compute the number of great ſhips that would be neceſſary to force the town to a capitulation: But this laſt conjecture ſoon appeared groundleſs, in as much as no ſhips of any kind whatever were afterwards employed on that ſervice.—A third ſort ſwore, that no other cauſe could be aſſigned for this undertaking, than that which induced Don Quixotte to attack the windmill. A fourth claſs (and that the moſt numerous, though, without doubt, compoſed of the moſt ſanguine and malicious) plainly taxed this commander with want of honeſty as well as ſenſe; and alledged that he ought to have ſacrificed private pique to the intereſt of his country! that where the lives of ſo many brave fellow-citizens were concerned, he ought to have concurred with the general, without being ſolicited, or even deſired, towards their preſervation and advantage; that if his arguments could not diſſuade him from a deſperate enterpriſe, it was his duty to have rendered it as practicable as poſſible, without running extreme hazard; that this could have been done,

done, with a good profpect of fuccefs, by ordering five or fix large fhips to batter the town, while the land forces ftormed the caftle: by thefe means a confiderable diverfion would have been made in favour of thofe troops, who, in their march to the affault, and in their retreat, fuffered much more from the town than from the caftle; that the inhabitants, feeing themfelves vigoroufly attacked on all hands, would have been divided, diftracted, and confufed, and, in all probability, unable to refift the affailants—But all thefe fuggeftions furely proceeded from ignorance and malevolence, or elfe the admiral would not have found it fuch an eafy matter, at his return to England, to juftify his conduct to a miniftry at once fo upright and difcerning.—True it is, that thofe who undertook to vindicate him on the fpot, afferted, there was not water enough for our great fhips near the town; tho' this was a little unfortunately urged, becaufe there happened to be pilots in the fleet perfectly well acquainted with the foundings of the harbour, who affirmed there was water enough for five eighty gun fhips to lie abreaft, almoft up at the very walls —The difappointments we fuffered occafioned an univerfal dejection, which was not at all alleviated by the objects that daily and hourly entertained our eyes, nor by the profpect of what muft have inevitably happened, had we remained much longer in this place. Such was the economy in fome fhips, that rather than be at the trouble of interring the dead, their commanders ordered their men to throw their bodies overboard, many without either ballaft or winding-fheet; fo that numbers of human carcaffes floated in the harbour, until they were devoured by fharks and carrion crows; which afforded no agreeable fpectacle to thofe who furvived.—At the fame time the wet feafon began, during which a deluge of rain falls from the rifing to the fetting of the fun, without intermiffion; and that no fooner ceafes, than it begins to thunder and lighten with fuch continual flafhing, that one can fee to read a very fmall print by the illumination.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXIV.

An epidemic Fever rages among us——We abandon our Conquests——I am seized with the Distemper; write a Petition to the Captain, which is rejected——I am in danger of Suffocation, through the Malice of Crampley; and relieved by a Serjeant——My Fever increases——The Chaplain wants to confess me—I obtain a favourable Crisis—Morgan's Affection for me proved—The Behaviour of Mackshane and Crampley towards me—Captain Oakam is removed into another Ship with his beloved Doctor——Our new Captain described——An Adventure of Morgan.

THE change of the atmosphere, occasioned by this phenomenon, conspired with the stench that surrounded us, the heat of the climate, our own constitutions, impoverished by bad provisions, and our despair, introduced the bilious fever among us, which raged with such violence, that three fourths of those whom it invaded died in a deplorable manner; the colour of their skin being, by the extreme putrefaction of the juices, changed into that of soot.

Our conductors finding things in this situation, perceived it was high time to relinquish our conquests; and this we did, after having rendered their artillery useless, and blown up their walls with gunpowder.—Just as we sailed from Boca Chica on our return to Jamaica, I found myself threatened with the symptoms of this terrible distemper; and knowing very well that I stood no chance for my life, if I should be obliged to lie in the cockpit, which, by this time, was grown intolerable even to people in health, by reason of the heat and unwholesome smell of decayed provision, I wrote a petition to the captain, representing my case, and humbly imploring his permission to lie among the soldiers in the middle-deck, for the benefit of the air: But I might have spared myself the trouble; for this humane commander refused my request, and ordered me to continue in the place allotted for

for the surgeon's mates, or else be contented to lie in the hospital, which, by the bye, was three degrees more offensive, and more suffocating than our own birth below. —Another in my condition, perhaps, would have submitted to his fate, and died in a pet; but I could not brook the thought of perishing so pitifully, after I had weathered so many gales of hard fortune: I therefore, without minding Oakum's injunction, prevailed upon the soldiers (whose good will I had acquired) to admit my hammock among them; and actually congratulated myself upon my comfortable situation; which Crampley no sooner understood, than he signified to the captain, my contempt of his orders; and was invested with power to turn me down again into my proper habitation.— This barbarous piece of revenge incensed me so much against the author, that I vowed, with bitter imprecations, to call him to a severe account, if ever it should be in my power; and the agitation of my spirits increased my fever to a violent degree.—While I lay gasping for breath in this infernal abode, I was visited by a serjeant, the bones of whose nose I had reduced and set to rights, after they had been demolished by a splinter during our last engagement: He being informed of my condition, offered me the use of his birth in the middle-deck, which was inclosed with canvass, and well aired by a port hole that remained open within it.—I embraced this proposal with joy, and was immediately conducted to the place, where I was treated, while my illness lasted, with the utmost tenderness and care by this grateful halberdier, who had no other bed for himself than a hencoop during the whole passage.—Here I lay and enjoyed the breeze; notwithstanding which, my malady gained ground, and at length my life was despaired of; though I never lost hopes of recovery, even when I had the mortification to see, from my cabin window, six or seven thrown overboard every day, who died of the same distemper. This confidence, I am persuaded, conduced a great deal to the preservation of my life, especially, when joined to another resolution I took at the beginning, namely, to refuse all medicine, which I could not help thinking co-operated

with

with the diſeaſe, and, inſtead of reſiſting putrefaction, promoted a total degeneracy of the vital fluid.—When my friend Morgan, therefore, brought his diaphoretic bolußes, I put them in my mouth, 'tis true, but without any intention of ſwallowing them; and when he went away, I ſpit them out, and waſhed my mouth with water-gruel. I ſeemingly complied in this manner, that I might not affront the blood of Caractacus, by a refuſal which might have intimated a diffidence of his phyſical capacity; for he acted as my phyſician; doctor Mackſhane never once enquiring about me, or even knowing where I was.—When my diſtemper was at the height, Morgan thought my caſe deſperate; and after having applied a bliſter to the nape of my neck, ſqueezed my hand, bidding me, with a woeful countenance, recommend myſelf to Got and my Reteemer; then taking his leave, deſired the chaplain to come and adminiſter ſome ſpiritual conſolation to me; but before he arrived, I made ſhift to rid myſelf of the troubleſome application the Welchman had beſtowed on my back.—The parſon having felt my pulſe, enquired into the nature of my complaints, hemmed a little, and began thus: "Mr. Random, God out of his infinite mercy hath been pleaſed to viſit you with a dreadful diſtemper, the iſſue of which no man knows.—You may be permitted to recover, and live many days on the face of the earth; and, which is more probable, you may be taken away, and cut off in the flower of your youth: It is incumbent on you, therefore, to prepare for the great change, by repenting ſincerely of your ſins; of this there cannot be a greater ſign, than an ingenuous confeſſion, which I conjure you to make, without heſitation, or mental reſervation; and when I am convinced of your ſincerity, I will then give you ſuch comfort as the ſituation of your ſoul will admit of. Without doubt, you have been guilty of numberleſs tranſgreſſions to which youth is ſubject, as ſwearing, drunkenneſs, whoredom, and adultery: tell me therefore, without reſerve, the particulars of each, eſpecially of the laſt, that I may be acquainted with the true ſtate of your conſcience! For no phyſician will preſcribe for his patient until he knows

knows the circumſtances of his diſeaſe." As I was not under any apprehenſions of death, I could not help ſmiling at the doctor's inquiſitive remonſtrance, which I told him ſavoured more of the Roman than of the Proteſtant church, in recommending auricular confeſſion; a thing, in my opinion, not at all neceſſary to ſalvation, and which, for that reaſon, I declined.—This reply diſconcerted him a little; however, he explained away his meaning, in making learned diſtinctions between what was abſolutely neceſſary, and what was only convenient; and then proceeded to aſk what religion I profeſſed: I anſwered, that I had not as yet conſidered the difference of religions, conſequently had not fixed on any one in particular, but that I was bred a Preſbyterian.—At this word the chaplain expreſſed great aſtoniſhment, and ſaid, he could not comprehend how a Preſbyterian was entitled to any poſt under the Engliſh government.—Then he aſked if I had ever received the Sacrament, or taken the oaths; to which queſtions I replying in the negative, he held up his hands, aſſured me he could do me no ſervice, wiſhed I might not be in a ſtate of reprobation, and returned to his meſs-mates, who were making merry in the ward-room, round a table well ſtored with bumbo* and wine.

This inſinuation, terrible as it was, had not ſuch an effect upon me as the fever, which, ſoon after he had left me, grew outrageous: I began to ſee ſtrange chimeras, and concluded myſelf on the point of becoming delirious: in the mean time being in great danger of ſuffocation, I ſtarted up in a kind of frantic fit, with an intention to plunge myſelf into the ſea; and as my friend the ſerjeant was not preſent, would certainly have cooled myſelf to ſome purpoſe, had I not perceived a moiſture upon my thigh, as I endeavoured to get out of my hammock: The appearance of this renewed my hopes, and I had reflection and reſolution enough to take the advantage of this favourable ſymptom, by tearing the ſhirt

* *Bumbo is a liquor compoſed of rum, ſugar, water and nutmeg.*

from

from my body, and the ſheets from my bed, and wrapping myſelf in a thick blanket, in which incloſure, for about a quarter of an hour, I felt the pains of hell: but it was not long before I was recompenſed for my ſuffering by a profuſe ſweat, that burſting from the whole ſurface of my ſkin, in leſs than two hours, relieved me from all my complaints, except that of weakneſs; and left me as hungry as a kite.—I enjoyed a very comfortable nap; after which I was regaling myſelf with the agreeable reverie of my future happineſs, when I heard Morgan, on the outſide of the curtain, aſk the ſerjeant, if I was alive ſtill? "Alive! (cried the other.) God forbid he ſhould be otherwiſe! He has lain quiet theſe five hours, and I do not chooſe to diſturb him, for ſleep will do him great ſervice."—"Aye, (ſaid my fellow mate,) he ſleeps ſo ſound, (look you) that he will never waken till the great trump plows.—Got be merciful to his ſoul.——He has paid his debt like an honeſt man.—Aye, and moreover, he is at reſt from all perſecutions, and troubles, and afflictions, of which, Got knows, and I know, he had his own ſhare.—Ochree! Ochree! he was a promiſing youth indeed."—So ſaying, he groaned grievouſly, and began to whine in ſuch a manner, as perſuaded me he had a real friendſhip for me.—The ſerjeant, alarmed at his words, came into the birth, and while he looked upon me, I ſmiled, and tipt him the wink. He immediately gueſſed my meaning, and, remaining ſilent, Morgan was confirmed in his opinion of my being dead; whereupon he approached with tears in his eyes, in order to indulge his grief with a ſight of the object: And I counterfeited death ſo well, by fixing my eyes, and dropping my under-jaw, that he ſaid, "There he lies, no petter than a lump of clay, Got help me." And obſerved, by the diſtortion of my face, that I muſt have had a ſtrong ſtruggle. I ſhould not have been able to contain myſelf much longer, when he began to perform the laſt duty of a friend, in cloſing my eyes and mouth: upon which I ſuddenly ſnapped at his fingers, and diſcompoſed him ſo much, that he ſtarted back, turned pale as aſhes, and ſtared like the picture of horror. Although

I could

I could not help laughing at his appearance, I was concerned for his ſituation, and ſtretched out my hand, telling him, I hoped to live and eat ſome ſalmagundy of his making in England. It was ſome time before he could recollect himſelf ſo far as to feel my pulſe, and enquire into the particulars of my diſeaſe: But when he found I had enjoyed a favourable criſis, he congratulated me upon my good fortune; not failing to aſcribe it, under Got, to the bliſter he had applied to my back at his laſt viſit; which, by the bye, ſaid he, muſt now be removed and dreſſed. He was actually going to fetch dreſſings, when I, feigning aſtoniſhment, ſaid, "Bleſs me! ſure you never applied a bliſter to me—there is nothing on my back, I aſſure you."—But he could not be convinced till he had examined it, and then endeavoured to conceal his confuſion, by expreſſing his ſurpriſe in finding the ſkin untouched, and the plaſter miſſing. In order to excuſe myſelf for paying ſo little regard to his preſcription, I pretended to have been inſenſible when it was put on, and to have pulled it off afterwards in a fit of delirium. This apology ſatisfied my friend, who on this occaſion abated a good deal of his ſtiffneſs in regard to punctilio; and as we were now ſafely arrived at Jamaica, where I had the benefit of freſh proviſions, and other refreſhments, I recovered ſtrength every day, and in a ſhort time my health and vigour were perfectly re-eſtabliſhed.—When I got up at firſt, and was juſt able to crawl about the deck with a ſtaff in my hand, I met doctor Mackſhane, who paſſed by me with a diſdainful look, and did not vouchſafe to honour me with one word. After him came Crampley, who, ſtrutting up to me, with a fierce countenance, pronounced, "Here's fine diſcipline on board, when ſuch lazy ſkulking ſons of bitches as you are allowed, on pretence of ſickneſs, to lollop at your eaſe, while your betters are kept to hard duty!" The ſight and behaviour of this malicious ſcoundrel enraged me ſo much, that I could ſcarce refrain from laying my cudgel acroſs his pate; but when I conſidered my preſent feebleneſs, and the enemies I had in the ſhip, who wanted only a pretence to ruin me, I

 reſtrained,

restrained my passion, and contented myself with telling him, I had not forgot his insolence and malice, and that I hoped we should meet one day on shore.—At this declaration he grinned, shook his fist, and swore he longed for nothing more than such an opportunity.

Mean while our ship was ordered to be heaved down, victualled and watered, for her return to England; and our captain, for some reason or other, not thinking it convenient for him to revisit his native country at this time, exchanged with a gentleman, who, on the other hand, wished for nothing so much as to be safe without the tropic; all his care and tenderness of himself being insufficient to preserve his complexion from the injuries of the sun and weather.

Our tyrant having left the ship, and carried his favourite Mackshane along with him, to my inexpressible satisfaction, our new commander came on board in a ten-oar'd barge, overshadowed with a vast umbrella, and appeared in every thing the reverse of Oakum, being a tall, thin young man, dressed in this manner: A white hat, garnished with a red feather, adorned his head, from whence his hair flowed upon his shoulders in ringlets, tied behind with a ribbon.—His coat, consisting of pink-coloured silk, lined with white, by the elegance of the cut, retired backward, as it were, to discover a white sattin waistcoat embroidered with gold, unbuttoned at the upper part to display a broach set with garnets, that glittered in the breast of his shirt, which was of the finest cambric, edged with real Mechlin: the knees of his crimson velvet breeches scarce descended so low as to meet his silk stockings, which rose without spot or wrinkle on his meagre legs, from shoes of blue Moroquin, studded with diamond buckles that flamed forth rivals to the sun! A steel hilted sword, inlaid with gold, and decked with a knot of ribbon, which fell down in a rich tassle, equipped his side; and an amber headed cane hung dangling from his wrist:—But the most remarkable part of his furniture were, a mask on his face, and white gloves on his hands, which did not seem to be put on with an intention to be pulled off occasionally, but were

fixed

fixed with a curious ring on the little finger of each hand.—In this garb, Captain Whiffle (for that was his name) took poſſeſſion of the ſhip, ſurrounded with a crowd of attendants, all of whom, in their different degrees, ſeemed to be of their patron's diſpoſition; and the air was ſo impregnated with perfumes, that one may venture to affirm, the clime of Arabia Fœlix was not half ſo ſweet ſcented.—My fellow mate, obſerving no ſurgeon among his train, thought he had found an occaſion too favourable for himſelf to be neglected; and remembering the old proverb, "Spare to ſpeak, and ſpare to ſpeed," reſolved to ſolicit the new captain's intereſt immediately, before any other ſurgeon could be appointed for the ſhip. With this view, he repaired to the cabin in his ordinary dreſs, conſiſting of a check-ſhirt and trowſers, a brown linen waiſtcoat, and a night-cap of the ſame, (neither of them very clean,) which, for his future misfortunes, happened to ſmell ſtrong of tobacco.—Entering without any ceremony into this ſacred place, he found Captain Whiffle repoſing upon a couch, with a wrapper of fine chintz about his body, and a muſlin cap, bordered with lace, about his head; and after ſeveral low congee's began in this manner:——"Sir, I hope you will forgive, and excuſe, and pardon the preſumption of one who has not the honour of being known unto you, but who is, nevertheleſs, a ſhentleman porn and pred, and moreover, has had misfortunes, Got help me, in the world."——Here he was interrupted by the captain, who, on ſeeing him, had ſtarted up with great amazement at the novelty of the apparition; and having recollected himſelf, pronounced, with a look and tone ſignifying diſdain, curioſity, and ſurpriſe, "Zauns! who art thou?"——"I am ſurgeon's firſt mate on board of this ſhip, (replied Morgan;) and I moſt vehemently deſire and beſeech you, with all ſubmiſſion, to be pleaſed to condeſcend and vouchſafe to enquire into my character, and my pehaviour, and my deſerts, which under Got, I hope, will entitle me to the vacancy of ſurgeon."——As he proceeded in his ſpeech, he continued advancing towards the captain, whoſe noſtrils were no ſooner ſaluted with the aromatic

flavour that exhaled from him, than he cried with great emotion, "Heaven preferve me! I am fuffocated!——Fellow, fellow, away with thee.——Curfe thee, fellow! get thee gone.—I fhall be ftunk to death!" At the noife of his outcries, his fervants ran into his apartment, and he accofted them thus: "Villains! cut-throats! traitors! I am betrayed! I am facrificed!—Will you not carry that monfter away? or muft I be ftifled with the ftench of him! Oh! oh!"—With thefe interjections, he funk down upon his fettee in a fit: his *valet de chambre* plied him with a fmelling bottle; one footman chafed his temples with Hungary water, another fprinkled the floor with fpirits of lavender, a third pufhed Morgan out of the cabin; who, coming to the place where I was, fat down with a demure countenance, and, according to his cuftom, when he received any indignity which he durft not revenge, began to fing a Welch ditty.—I gueffed he was under fome agitation of fpirits, and defired to know the caufe; but, inftead of anfwering me directly, he afked with great emotion, if I thought him a monfter and a ftinkard? "A monfter and a ftinkard! (faid I, with fome furprife;) did any body call you fo?"—Got is my judge (replied he) Captain Fifle did call me both; aye, and all the water in the Tawy will not wafh it out of my remembrance.——I do affirm, and vouch, and maintain, with my foul and my pody, and my plood, look you, that I have no fmells about me, but fuch as a Chriftian ought to have, except the effluvia of tobacco, which is a cephalic, odoriferous, aromatic herb, and he is the fon of a mountain goat who fays otherwife.—As for my being a monfter, let that be as it is: I am as Got was pleafed to create me, which, peradventure, is more than I fhall aver of him who gave me that title; for I will proclaim it before the world, that he is difguifed, and transfigured, and tranfmographied with affectation and whimfies; and that he is more like a papoon than one of the human race."

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXV.

Captain Whiffle ſends for me——His Situation deſcribed ——His Surgeon arrives, preſcribes for him, and puts him to Bed—— a Bed is put up for Mr. Simper, contiguous to the State-room, which, with other parts of the Captain's Behaviour, gives the Ship's Company a very unfavourable Idea of their Commander——I am detained in the Weſt Indies, by the Admiral, and go on Board of the Lizzard Sloop of War in quality of Surgeon's Mate, where I make myſelf known to the Surgeon, who treats me very kindly——I go on Shore, ſell my Ticket, purchaſe Neceſſaries, and at my return on Board am ſurpriſed at the Sight of Crampley, who is appointed Lieutenant of the Sloop——We ſail on a Cruize——Take a Prize, in which I arrive at Port Morant, under the Command of my Meſs-mate, with whom I live in great Harmony.

HE was going on with an eulogium upon the captain, when I received a meſſage to clean myſelf, and go up to the great cabin: and with this command I inſtantly complied, ſweetening myſelf with roſe water from the medicine cheſt. When I entered the room, I was ordered to ſtand by the door, until Captain Whiffle had reconnoitered me at a diſtance with a ſpy glaſs. He having conſulted one ſenſe in this manner, bade me advance gradually, that his noſe might have intelligence, before it could be much offended : I therefore approached with great caution and ſucceſs, and he was pleaſed to ſay, " Aye, this creature is tolerable."—I found him lolling on his couch with a languiſhing air, his head ſupported by his *valet de chambre*, who from time to time applied a ſmelling bottle to his noſe.——" Vergette, (ſaid he, in a ſqueaking tone) doſt thou think this wretch (meaning me) will do me no injury? may I venture to ſubmit my arm to him?——" Pon my vord, (replied the valet,) I do tink dat dere be great occaſion for your honour loſing one ſmall quantite of blodt; and the young man ave quelque choſe of de bonne mien."—" Well then (ſaid his maſter) I think I muſt venture."—Then addreſſing himſelf to me, " Haſt thou ever blooded any

body but brutes?—But I need not ask thee, for thou wilt tell me a most damnable lie."——"Brutes, Sir, (answered I, pulling down his glove, in order to feel his pulse;) I never meddle with brutes."—"What the devil art thou about? (cried he;) dost thou intend to twist off my hand? Gad's curse! my arm is benumbed up to the very shoulder! Heaven have mercy upon me! must I perish under the hands of savages? What an unfortunate dog was I to come on board without my own surgeon, Mr. Simper."—I craved pardon for having handled him so roughly, and with the utmost care and tenderness tied up his arm with a fillet of silk. While I was feeling for the vein, he desired to know how much blood I intended to take from him, and when I answered, "Not above twelve ounces," started up with a look full of horror, and bade me begone, swearing I had a design upon his life.—Vergette appeased him with difficulty; and opening a bureau, took out a pair of scales, in one of which was placed a small cup; and putting them into my hand, told me, the captain never lost above an ounce and three drachms at one time.—While I prepared for this important evacuation, there came into the cabin a young man, gayly dressed, of a very delicate complexion, with a kind of languid smile on his face, which seemed to have been rendered habitual by a long course of affectation.——The captain no sooner perceived him, than rising hastily, he flew into his arms, crying, "O! my dear Simper! I am excessively disordered! I have been betrayed, frighted, murdered, by the negligence of my servants, who suffered a beast, a mule, a bear, to surprize me, and stink me into convulsions with the fumes of tobacco."—Simper, who by this time, I found, was obliged to art for the clearness of his complexion, assumed an air of softness and sympathy, and lamented, with many tender expressions of sorrow, the sad accident that had thrown him into that condition; then feeling his patient's pulse on the outside of his glove, gave it as his opinion, that his disorder was entirely nervous, and that some drops of tincture of castor and liquid laudanum would be of more service to him than bleeding, by

bridling

bridling the inordinate fallies of his fpirits, and compofing the fermentation of his bile—I was therefore fent to prepare this prefcription, which was adminiftered in a glafs of fack poffet; after the captain had been put to bed, and orders fent to the officers on the quarter-deck, to let no-body walk on that fide under which he lay.

While the captain enjoyed his repofe, the doctor watched over him, and indeed became fo neceffary, that a cabin was made for him contiguous to the ftate-room, where Whiffle flept, that he might be at hand in cafe of accidents in the night.——Next day, our commander being happily recovered, gave orders, that none of the lieutenants fhould appear upon deck without a wig, fword, and ruffles; nor any midfhipman, or other petty officer, be feen with a check fhirt, or dirty linen.—— He alfo prohibited any perfon whatever, except Simper, and his own fervants, from coming into the great cabin, without firft fending in to obtain leave.—Thefe fingular regulations did not prepoffefs the fhip's company in his favour; but, on the contrary, gave fcandal an opportunity to be very bufy with his character, and accufed him of maintaining a correfpondence with his furgeon not fit to be named.

In a few weeks our fhip being under failing orders, I was in hope of revifiting my native country in a very fhort time, when the admiral's furgeon came on board, and fending for Morgan and me to the quarter-deck, gave us to underftand there was a great fcarcity of furgeons in the Weft Indies; that he was commanded to detain one mate out of every great fhip that was bound for England; and defired us to agree between ourfelves, before the next day at that hour, which of us fhould ftay behind.—We were thunderftruck at this propofal, and ftared at one another fome time without fpeaking. At length the Welchman broke filence, and offered to remain in the Weft Indies, provided the admiral would give him a furgeon's warrant immediately: but he was told there was no want of chief furgeons, and that he muft be contented with the ftation of mate, till he fhould be further provided for in due courfe: Whereupon

upon Morgan flatly refufed to quit the fhip for which the commiffioners of the navy had appointed him; and the other told him as plainly, that if we could not determine the affair by ourfelves before to-morrow morning, he muft caft lots, and abide by his chance.——When I recalled to my remembrance the miferies I had undergone in England, where I had not one friend to promote my intereft, or favour my advancement in the navy, and at the fame time reflected on the prefent dearth of furgeons in the Weft Indies, and the unhealthinefs of the climate, which every day almoft reduced the number, I could not help thinking my fuccefs would be much more certain and expeditious, by my ftaying where I was, than by my returning to Europe.——I therefore refolved to comply with a good grace; and next day, when we were ordered to throw the dice, told Morgan he need not trouble himfelf, for I would voluntarily fubmit to the admiral's pleafure.——This frank declaration was commended by the gentleman, who affured me, it fhould not fare the worfe with me for my refignation. Indeed, he was as good as his word, and that very afternoon procured a warrant, appointing me furgeon's mate of the Lizzard floop of war, which put me on a footing with every firft mate in the fervice.

My ticket being made out, I put my cheft and bedding on board a canoe that lay along-fide, and having fhook hands with my trufty friend the ferjeant, and honeft Jack Rattlin, who was bound for Greenwich hofpital, I took my leave of Morgan with many tears, after we had exchanged our fleeve-buttons as remembrances of each other.—Having prefented my new warrant to the captain of the Lizzard, I enquired for the doctor, whom I no fooner faw, than I recollected him to be one of thofe young fellows with whom I had been committed to the round-houfe, during our frolic with Jackfon, as I have related before.——He received me with a good deal of courtefy; and when I put him in mind of our former acquaintance, expreffed great joy at feeing me again, and recommended me to an exceeding good mefs, compofed of the gunner and mafter's mate.—

As

As there was not one ſick perſon in the ſhip, I got leave to go aſhore, next day, with the gunner, who recommended me to a Jew, that bought my ticket at the rate of 40 *per cent.* diſcount; and having furniſhed myſelf with what neceſſaries I wanted, returned on board in the evening, and to my ſurpriſe found my old antagoniſt Crampley walking upon deck.—Though I did not fear his enmity, I was ſhocked at his appearance, and communicated my ſentiments on that ſubject to Mr. Tomlins the ſurgeon, who told me that Crampley, by dint of ſome friends about the admiral, had procured a commiſſion, conſtituting him lieutenant on board the Lizzard: and adviſed me, now he was my ſuperior officer, to behave with ſome reſpect towards him, or elſe he would find a thouſand opportunities of uſing me ill.——This advice was a bitter potion to me, whom pride and reſentment had rendered utterly incapable of the leaſt ſubmiſſion to, or even of a reconciliation with, the wretch who had, on many occaſions, treated me ſo inhumanly: However, I reſolved to have as little connection as poſſible with him, and to ingratiate myſelf as much as I could with the reſt of the officers, whoſe friendſhip might be a bulwark to defend me from the attempts of his malice.

In leſs than a week we ſailed on a cruize, and having weathered the eaſt end of the iſland, had the good fortune to take a Spaniſh barcolongo, with her prize, which was an Engliſh ſhip bound for Briſtol, that had ſailed from Jamaica a fortnight before without convoy. All the priſoners who were well, we put on ſhore on the north-ſide of the iſland: the prizes were manned with Engliſhmen, and the command of the barcolongo given to my friend the maſter's mate, with orders to carry them into Port Morant, and there to remain until the Lizzard's cruize ſhould be ended, at which time ſhe would touch at the ſame place in her way to Port-Royal.——With him I was ſent to attend the wounded Spaniards as well as Engliſhmen, who amounted to ſixteen, and to take care of them on ſhore, in a houſe that was to be hired as an hoſpital.—This deſtination gave me a great deal of pleaſure, as I ſhould, for ſome time, be freed

from

from the arrogance of Crampley, whose inveteracy against me had already broke out on two or three occasions since he was become a lieutenant.—My mess-mate, who very much resembled my uncle, both in figure and disposition, treated me on board of the prize with the utmost civility and confidence; and, among other favours, made me a present of a silver hilted hanger, and a pair of pistols mounted with the same metal, which fell to his share in plundering the enemy.——We arrived safely at Morant, and going on shore, pitched upon an empty store-house, which we hired for the reception of the wounded, who were brought to it next day, with beds and other necessaries; and four of the ship's company appointed to attend them, and obey me.

CHAP. XXXVI.

A strange Adventure——In consequence of which I am extremely happy——Crampley does me ill Offices with the Captain: But his Malice is defeated by the good Nature and Friendship of the Surgeon——We return to Port-Royal——Our Captain gets the Command of a larger Ship, and is succeeded by an old Man——Brayl is provided for——We receive Orders to sail for England.

WHEN my patients were all in a fair way, my companion and commander, whose name was Brayl, carried me up the country to the house of a rich planter, with whom he was acquainted; where we were sumptuously entertained, and in the evening set out on our return to the ship. When we had walked about a mile by moon-light, we perceived a horseman behind us, who coming up, wished us *good even*, and asked which way we went. His voice, which was quite familiar to me, no sooner struck my ear, than, in spite of all my resolution and reflection, my hair bristled up, and I was seized with a violent fit of trembling, which Brayl misinterpreting, bade me be under no concern.—I told him he was mistaken in the cause of my disorder; and addressing myself to the person on horseback, said, "I could have sworn

ſworn, by your voice, that you was a dear friend of mine, if I had not been certain of his death." To this addreſs, after ſome pauſe, he replied, "There are many voices as well as faces that reſemble one another; but pray, what was your friend's name?" I ſatisfied him in that particular, and gave a ſhort detail of the melancholy fate of Thompſon, not without many ſighs and ſome tears. A ſilence enſued which laſted ſome minutes, and then the converſation turned on different ſubjects, till we arrived at a houſe on the road, where the horſeman alighted, and begged, with ſo much earneſtneſs, that we would go in and drink a bowl of punch with him, that we could not reſiſt.—But if I was alarmed at his voice, what muſt my amazement be, when I diſcovered by the light, the very perſon of my lamented friend! Perceiving my confuſion, which was extreme, he claſped me in his arms, and bedewed my face with tears.—It was ſome time ere I recovered the uſe of my reaſon, overpowered with this event, and longer ſtill before I could ſpeak. So that all I was capable of was to return his embraces, and to mingle the overflowings of my joy with his; whilſt honeſt Brayl, affected with the ſcene, wept as faſt as either of us, and ſignified his participation of our happineſs, by hugging us both, and capering about the room like a madman.—At length I retrieved the uſe of my tongue, and cried, "Is it poſſible? can you be my friend Thompſon? No certainly. Alas! he was drowned! and I am now under the deception of a dream!"——He was at great pains to convince me of his being the individual perſon whom I regretted, and bidding me ſit down and compoſe myſelf, promiſed to explain his ſudden diſappearance from the Thunder, and to account for his being at preſent in the land of the living.—This taſk he acquitted himſelf of, after I had drank a glaſs of punch, and recruited my ſpirits, by informing us, that, with a determination to rid himſelf of a miſerable exiſtence, he had gone in the night time to the head, while the ſhip was on her way, from whence he ſlipped down, as ſoftly as he could, by the bows, into the ſea, where, after he was heartily ducked, he began to repent of his

precipitation,

precipitation; and as he could ſwim very well, kept himſelf above water, in hopes of being taken up by ſome of the ſhips aſtern;—that in this ſituation, he hailed a large veſſel, and begged to be taken in, but was anſwered that ſhe was a heavy ſailer, and therefore they did not chooſe to looſe time by bringing to; however, they threw an old cheſt overboard for his convenience, and told him, that ſome of the ſhips aſtern would certainly ſave him;—that no other veſſel came within ſight or cry of him for the ſpace of three hours, during which time he had the mortification to find himſelf in the middle of the ocean alone, without other ſupport or reſting place but what a few crazy boards afforded; till at laſt he diſcerned a ſmall ſloop ſteering towards him, upon which he ſet up his throat, and had the good fortune to be heard, and reſcued from the dreary waſte by their boat, which was hoiſted out on purpoſe.—"I was no ſooner brought on board (continued he) than I fainted; and when I recovered my ſenſes, found myſelf in bed, regaled with a moſt noiſome ſmell of onions and cheeſe, which made me think at firſt, that I was in my own hammock, along ſide of honeſt Morgan, and that all which had paſſed was no more than a dream.—Upon enquiry I underſtood that I was on board of a ſchooner belonging to Rhode Iſland, bound for Jamaica, with a cargo of geeſe, pigs, onions, and cheeſe; and that the maſter's name was Robertſon, by birth a North Briton, whom I knew at firſt ſight to be an old ſchool-fellow of mine.—When I diſcovered myſelf to him, he was tranſported with ſurpriſe and joy, and begged to know the occaſion of my misfortune, which I did not think fit to diſcloſe, becauſe I knew his notions with regard to religion were very ſevere and confined; therefore contented myſelf with telling him, I fell over-board by accident; but made no ſcruple of explaining the nature of my diſagreeable ſtation, and of acquainting him with my determined purpoſe never to return to the Thunder man of war.—Although he was not of my opinion in that particular, knowing I muſt loſe my cloaths, and what pay was due to me, unleſs I went back to my duty; yet, when I deſcribed the

circumſtances

circumſtances of the helliſh life I led, under the tyrannic ſway of Oakum and Mackſhane; and among other grievances, hinted a diſſatisfaction of the irreligious deportment of my ſhip-mates, and the want of the true Preſbyterian goſpel doctrine; he changed his ſentiments, and conjured me with great vehemence and zeal to lay aſide all thoughts of riſing in the navy; and that he might ſhew how much he had my intereſt at heart, undertook to provide for me in ſome ſhape or other, before he ſhould leave Jamaica.—This promiſe he performed to my heart's deſire; by recommending me to a gentleman of fortune, with whom I have lived ever ſince, in quality of ſurgeon and overſeer to his plantations.—He and his lady are now at Kingſton, ſo that I am, for the preſent, maſter of this houſe, to which, from my ſoul, I bid you welcome, and hope you will favour me with your company during the remaining part of the night."—I needed not a ſecond invitation; but Mr. Brayl, who was a diligent and excellent officer, could not be perſuaded to ſleep out of the ſhip: however, he ſupped with us, and, after having drank a chearful glaſs, ſet out for the veſſel, which was not above three miles from the place, eſcorted by a couple of ſtout negroes, whom Mr. Thomſon ordered to conduct him.—Never were two friends more happy in the converſation of each other than we, for the time it laſted: I related to him the particulars of our attempt upon Carthagena, of which he had heard but an imperfect account; and he gratified me with a narration of every little incident of his life ſince we parted.—He aſſured me it was with the utmoſt difficulty, he could reſiſt his inclination of coming down to Port-Royal to ſee Morgan and me, of whom he had heard no tidings ſince the day of our ſeparation; but that he was reſtrained by the fear of being detained as a deſerter.—He told me, that when he heard my voice in the dark, he was almoſt as much ſurpriſed as I was at ſeeing him afterwards; and in the confidence of friendſhip, diſcloſed a paſſion he entertained for the only daughter of the gentleman with whom he lived,

 who,

who, by his defcription, was a very amiable young lady, and did not difdain his addreffes; that he was very much favoured by her parents, and did not defpair of obtaining their confent to the match, which would at once render him independent of the world.—I congratulated him on his good fortune, which he protefted fhould never make him forget his friends; and towards morning we betook ourfelves to reft.

Next day he accompanied me to the fhip, where Mr. Brayl entertained him at dinner; and we having fpent the afternoon together, he took his leave of us in the evening, after he had forced upon me ten piftoles, as a fmall token of his affection.—In fhort, while we ftaid here, we faw one another every day, and generally ate at the fame table, which was plentifully fupplied by him with all kinds of poultry, butcher's meat, oranges, limes, lemons, pine apples, Madeira wine, and excellent rum; fo that this fmall interval of ten days, was by far the moft agreeable period of my life.

At length the Lizard arrived; and my patients being all fit for duty, they and I were ordered on board of her, where I underftood from Mr. Tomlins, that there was a fhynefs between the Lieutenant and him, on my account; that rancorous villain having taken the opportunity of my abfence, to fill the captain's ears with a thoufand fcandalous ftories to my prejudice; among other things affirming, that I had been once tranfported for theft, and that when I was in the Thunder man of war, I had been whipt for the fame crime.—The furgeon, on the other hand, having heard my whole ftory from my own mouth, defended me ftrenuoufly, and in the courfe of that good natured office, recounted all the inftances of Crampley's malice againft me, while I remained on board of that fhip.—Which declaration, while it fatisfied the captain of my innocence, made the lieutenant as much my defender's enemy as mine.—This infernal behaviour of Crampley, with regard to me, added fuch fuel to my former refentment, that at certain times, I was quite befide myfelf with the defire of revenge, and

was

was even tempted to pistol him on the quarter-deck, though an infamous death must inevitably have been my reward.—But the surgeon, who was my confident, argued against such a desperate action so effectually, that I stifled the flame which consumed me for the present, and resolved to wait for a more convenient opportunity.—In the mean time, that Mr. Tomlins might be the more convinced of the wrongs I suffered by this fellow's slander, I begged he would go and visit Mr. Thomson, whose wonderful escape, I had made him acquainted with, and enquire of him into the particulars of my conduct, while he was my fellow-mate. This request the surgeon complied with, more from a curiosity, to see a person whose fate had been so extraordinary, than to confirm his good opinion of me, which he assured me was already firmly established.—He therefore set out for the dwelling place of my friend, with the letter of introduction from me: and being received with all the civility and kindness I expected, returned to the ship, not only satisfied with my character, beyond the power of doubt or insinuation, but also charmed with the affability and conversation of Thompson, who loaded him and me with presents of fresh stock, liquors and fruit. As he would not venture to come and see us on board, lest Crampley should know and detain him; when the time of our departure approached, I obtained leave to go and bid him farewel.—After we had vowed an everlasting friendship, he pressed upon me a purse with four doubloons, which I refused as long as I could, without giving umbrage; and having cordially embraced each other, I returned on board, where I found a small box, with a letter directed to me, to the care of Mr. Tomlins—Knowing the superscription to be of Thompson's hand-writing, I opened it with some surprize, and learned that this generous friend, not content with loading me with the presents already mentioned, had sent for my use and acceptance, half a dozen fine shirts, and as many linen waistcoats and caps, with twelve pair of new thread stockings.—Being thus provided with money,

ney, and all neceſſaries for the comfort of life, I began to look upon myſelf as a gentleman of ſome conſequence and felt my pride dilate a-pace.

Next day we ſailed for Port Royal, where we arrived ſafely with our prizes; and as there was nothing to do on board, I went aſhore, and having purchaſed a laced waiſtcoat, with ſome other clothes at a ſale, made ſwaggering figure for ſome days, among the tavern where I ventured to play a little at hazard, and cam off with fifty piſtoles in my pocket. Meanwhile ou captain was promoted to a ſhip of twenty guns, and th command of the Lizard given to a man turned of four ſcore, who had been lieutenant ſince the reign of King William, and notwithſtanding his long ſervice, woul have probably died in that ſtation, had he not applie ſome prize-money he had lately received, to make inte reſt with his ſuperiors. My friend Brayl was alſo mad an officer, about the ſame time, after he had ſerved in quality of midſhipman and mate, five and twenty years. Soon after theſe alterations, the admiral pitched upon our ſhip to carry home diſpatches for the miniſtry; and we ſet ſail for England, having firſt ſcrubbed her bottom, and taken in proviſion and water for the occaſion.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.

TANJORE MAHA... SARASWATI MAHAL